Short-lived halocarbon species in the Oceans and Atmosphere

Stephen J. Andrews

Doctor of Philosophy

University of York
Department of Chemistry

September 2013
Abstract

This study aimed to improve current understanding of the emissions and distributions of very short-lived halocarbons (VSLH), thus their impact on atmospheric halogen chemistry. VSLH measurements were made during the TROMPEX campaign over the tropical Atlantic Ocean and Mauritanian upwelling region. This produced the first reported measurements of \( \text{CH}_2\text{ICl} \) by a research aircraft and identified an open-ocean source, likely linked to phytoplankton. VSLH emissions over the upwelling, implicated as a major localised source, were similar to previously measured coastal emissions which globally cover a much larger area. Thus it is likely that coastal upwelling systems in themselves are not strong global sources of VSLH.

Ship-borne VSLH measurements were taken in the East Tropical Pacific (ETP) during the TORERO campaign. High sensitivity and frequency sampling gave new information regarding the distribution of VSLH, including a photolytically driven diurnal cycle of \( \text{CH}_2\text{I}_2 \). Fluxes were calculated using simultaneous seawater and air measurements spanning a large area of the ETP where very few other measurements exist. Although individual VSLH depth profiles showed covariance with Chlorophyll-a (Chl-a), cross sections revealed differences in their latitudinal distributions. In fact there was little bulk correlation with surface water concentrations of Chl-a. \( \text{CH}_2\text{I}_2 \) and \( \text{CH}_2\text{ICl} \) displayed a negative relationship with Chl-a, attributed to physical and mixing processes. \( \text{CHBr}_3, \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) and \( \text{CHBr}_2\text{Cl} \) showed a relationship between surface and deep maxima concentrations suggesting that if a proxy for their production was found that this would negate the use of water column models to parameterise the surface concentrations of these species.

Wind speed controls VSLH distribution in the ocean mixed layer and may even influence oceanic lifetimes of the shortest-lived species via increased turbidity and solar attenuation. It also exerts a strong control on \( \text{CH}_3\text{I}, \text{CH}_2\text{ICl}, \text{CH}_2\text{I}_2 \) and \( \text{CHCl}_3 \) emissions and could form a link between emissions and future changes in climate.
Contents

Abstract iii

List of figures x

List of tables xvii

Acknowledgements xxi

Declaration xxiii

1 Introduction 1

1.1 Preface . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 2

1.2 Atmospheric dynamics . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 3

1.2.1 Global Energy Budget . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 5

1.2.2 Albedo . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 6

1.3 Ocean dynamics . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 6

1.3.1 Thermohaline circulation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 6

1.3.2 Surface Currents . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 8

1.3.3 Upwelling . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 8

1.4 Atmospheric Compostion . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 9

1.4.1 Halogen chemistry . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 12

1.4.1.1 Tropospheric halogen chemistry . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 13

1.4.2 Halogen oxides and the ozone budget . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 14

1.4.3 Sources of Reactive Halogen Species . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 17

1.4.4 Marine Aerosol . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 17

1.4.5 New Particle Formation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 19

1.4.6 Direct Oceanic Flux of RHS . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 20

1.4.7 Very Short-Lived Halocarbons (VSLH) . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 21

1.4.8 VSLH sources and sinks . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 22

1.4.9 Transport of VSLH . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 22

1.4.10 Halogen monoxide in the atmosphere . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 24

1.5 Bromocarbons, Chlorocarbons and Iodocarbons . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 26
2.5.2 Markes Unity2– Agilent GC-MS ........................................ 72
  2.5.2.1 VSLH using Negative Chemical Ionisation (NCI) ......... 73
  2.5.2.2 MSD source modification ...................................... 77
  2.5.2.3 GC-MS for fieldwork application ............................. 77
2.5.3 Data processing .................................................... 80
2.6 Analysis of VSLH in water .......................................... 81
  2.6.1 Water analysis .................................................. 81
  2.6.2 Purge and Trap .................................................. 82
  2.6.3 Manual Purge and Trap ......................................... 84
  2.6.4 Automation of the system ....................................... 85
    2.6.4.1 Inline analysis ........................................... 86
    2.6.4.2 Offline analysis ......................................... 88
  2.6.5 Experimental results ........................................... 90
    2.6.5.1 Purge efficiency .......................................... 93
    2.6.5.2 Results and sample storage tests ......................... 93
    2.6.5.3 Underway supply vs. CTD bottles ....................... 97
  2.6.6 Further work .................................................. 98
2.7 Summary ............................................................. 99

3 Accurate Quantification of VSLH ..................................... 101
  3.1 Overview .......................................................... 102
  3.2 Calibration ........................................................ 102
    3.2.1 Linearity and breakthrough tests ............................ 102
    3.2.2 Linearity tests NCI ......................................... 105
    3.2.3 Internal standards ............................................ 108
      3.2.3.1 Internal standard loop injections ....................... 109
      3.2.3.2 Carbon tetrachloride as an internal standard ........ 110
      3.2.3.3 Medium term instrument stability ..................... 111
    3.2.4 Maintaining sample integrity- VSLH compatible materials . 112
  3.3 Calibration Sources ............................................... 113
    3.3.1 Permeation Oven ............................................. 113
      3.3.1.1 Permeation rates ..................................... 115
      3.3.1.2 Instrument calibration using permeation oven ....... 115
      3.3.1.3 Permeation oven drawbacks ........................... 117
3.3.2 Gas standards .............................................. 119
  3.3.2.1 Cylinder material and stability .................. 119
  3.3.2.2 SX-3570 NOAA VSLH standard .................. 120
  3.3.2.3 VSLH cylinder stability testing .................. 122
  3.3.2.4 SilcoCan stability testing ...................... 125

3.3.3 Comparison of permeation oven with SX-3570 .... 127

3.4 Intercalibration .......................................... 128
  3.4.1 UK intercalibration ................................ 128
    3.4.1.1 Analysis of the intercalibration standard .... 129
    3.4.1.2 Results from the intercalibration .......... 131
  3.4.2 US intercalibration ................................ 134
    3.4.2.1 Ambient air intercomparison .................. 135

3.5 Summary .................................................. 137

4 Halocarbons in the Tropical Atlantic Ocean ....... 139
  4.1 Aircraft measurements of VSLH over the tropical
    Atlantic Ocean ......................................... 140
    4.1.1 Methodology ...................................... 142
      4.1.1.1 BAE-146 ..................................... 142
      4.1.1.2 Whole Air Sampling (WAS) samples .......... 143
    4.1.2 Experimental ..................................... 144
  4.3 Results and Discussion ................................ 148
    4.3.1 Air Mass Origins ................................ 148
    4.3.2 Iodocarbons .................................... 148
    4.3.3 Bromocarbons .................................. 154
  4.4 Summary ................................................ 155

5 VSLH in the tropical Pacific Ocean .................. 157
  5.1 The East Tropical Pacific ............................. 158
    5.1.1 Motivation for measurements of halogens in the East
          Tropical Pacific (ETP) ............................ 160
  5.2 Experimental ......................................... 161
    5.2.1 Aircraft overpasses ............................. 164
    5.2.2 In-vivo chlorophyll-a ......................... 164
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5.2.3</td>
<td>Conductivity, Temperature, Depth (CTD)</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.4</td>
<td>Instrumental setup</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.4.1</td>
<td>Air sampling</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.4.2</td>
<td>Water sampling</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Niskin bottle samples from CTD casts</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Online sampling from bow water inlet</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.4.3</td>
<td>Instrument stability</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.5</td>
<td>Back Trajectory Analysis</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>Results and Analysis</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.1</td>
<td>Thermohaline distribution</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.1.1</td>
<td>Salinity</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.1.2</td>
<td>Temperature</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.2</td>
<td>Ozone</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.3</td>
<td>Wind speed and direction</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.3.1</td>
<td>Mixed layer depth variability</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.4</td>
<td>Nutrients</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.5</td>
<td>Chlorophyll-a</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.6</td>
<td>VSLH in surface seawater and air</td>
<td>187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.6.1</td>
<td>Iodocarbons</td>
<td>190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.6.2</td>
<td>Chloro/Bromocarbons</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.7</td>
<td>GV vertical profiles</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.8</td>
<td>Diurnal cycles</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>VSLH in the ocean</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4.0.1</td>
<td>CTD cross-sections</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4.1</td>
<td>Depth profiles</td>
<td>210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4.1.1</td>
<td>Iodocarbon depth profiles</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4.1.2</td>
<td>Chloro/bromocarbon depth profiles</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4.1.3</td>
<td>Chlorocarbon biological production</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>Summary</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Factors controlling the emission of VSLH</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Controls on VSLH oceanic production</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.2</td>
<td>Factors controlling VSLH distribution in the water column</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
6.2.1 Another route to iodocarbon production? 230
6.3 Surface ocean- MBL exchange of VSLH 231
6.3.1 Fluxes 233
6.4 Wind speed dependence 243
  6.4.1 Surface water VSLH vs wind speed (U) 243
  6.4.2 Air VSLH vs wind speed (U) 247
    6.4.2.1 CH$_2$ICl wind speed relationship 252
6.5 Factors controlling the atmospheric distribution of VSLH 255
  6.5.1 Equatorial enhancements 255
    6.5.1.1 MBL 258
  6.5.2 Hemispheric differences crossing the ITCZ 262
    6.5.2.1 Chloroform distribution 262
  6.5.3 VSLH in air positively correlated to solar radiation 268
6.6 Summary 272

7 Concluding remarks 275

Appendix 279

A Supplementary Figures and Information 279
  A.1 Appendix figures 280
  A.2 Auto Purge and Trap code 283

Abbreviations 289

References 295
List of Figures

1.1 Ozone sonde vertical profile data, 27th August 1997, Trinidad Head, CA . . 3
1.2 Satellite observations of the Earth’s energy system from NASA NEO . . . . 4
1.3 Representation of atmospheric circulation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 5
1.4 Large scale thermohaline ocean circulation . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 7
1.5 Ekman spiral in the northern hemisphere . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 8
1.6 Graphical representation of wind driven coastal and equatorial upwelling.
Red arrows represent wind shear, blue arrows show movement of ocean
currents. Black arrows represent surface ocean current . . . . . . . . . . . . . 9
1.7 Daytime VOC photooxidation cycle . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 11
1.8 Monthly averaged contributions to the daily ozone budget . . . . . . . . . . 15
1.9 Measured IO concentrations from Differential Optical Absorption Spec-
troscopy (DOAS) and the effect of including extra I$_2$ flux on modeled O$_3$
compared to observations. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 16
1.10 Simplified oceanic and atmospheric halogen chemistry schematic . . . . . 21
1.11 Modelled vertical transport of short-lived species of oceanic origin . . . . 23
1.12 Potential halocarbon exchange reactions in the ocean in the presence of
sunlight. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 30
1.13 GeosChem global bromoform atmospheric mixing ratio map for February
2012 . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 31
1.14 Two layer model of a gas–liquid interface (Liss and Slater, 1974). . . . . . 37

2.1 Schematic of a MS EI source . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 55
2.2 Depiction of the relationship between RF and DC voltages producing stable
ion trajectory zones . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 58
2.3 Gold coated, quartz, true hyperbolic quad employed in the Agilent 5973,
5975 and 5977 MSDs . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 59
2.4 Adsorption of analytes onto tubes followed by desorption and cryogenic
refocusing. Sample is drawn through an absorbent tube where analytes are
trapped. The tube is heated (red bars) to desorb the analytes onto the
GC column. Liquid nitrogen can be used to refocus the analytes before
separation. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 61
2.5 Focussing of tube desorbed or on-line samples via a low volume, cooled adsorbent trap. Adsorbent tube is heated (red bars) to desorb analytes which are re-focused onto a smaller, cooled (blue bars) adsorbent trap prior to desorption onto the GC column. ............................................ 62
2.6 Schematic of a Peltier plate ..................................................... 63
2.7 Graphical representation of a multi-bed adsorbent trap and its operation. 64
2.8 Cryogenically re-focussing analytes from a cooled absorbent trap (blue bars) onto a narrow bore column for fast GC analysis. ............................ 65
2.9 Schematic showing a Free-Piston Stirling Cooler (FPSC) ....................... 66
2.10 Schematic drawing representing a counter-current nafion type drier. ........ 68
2.11 Recovery tests of VSLS through a coldfinger drier at -30°C ................. 69
2.12 CAD drawing of FPSC coldfinger design .................................. 70
2.13 Perkin Elmer TurboMatrix300 TD-AutosystemXL GC-MS chromatogram of VSLH ................................................................. 72
2.14 Typical open-ocean marine air sample chromatogram from the Unity2–Agilent GC-MS system ....................................................... 73
2.15 Analysis of a gas standard containing mixed VSLH ranging between 0.4–2.7 ppt using NCI .............................................................. 74
2.16 TD-GC-MS system in a custom built, ruggedised flight case, ............... 78
2.17 Field portable TD-GC-MS system mounted in flight case .................... 79
2.18 GCWerks program modified to accept Agilent Chemstation data files .... 80
2.19 Design of glass purge tube to optimise gas-liquid contact time ............ 83
2.20 Schematic of the AutoP&T system ........................................... 85
2.21 Automated purge and trap valve flow diagram .................................. 86
2.22 Circuit diagram for automated control of the purge and trap system .......... 87
2.23 Timing diagram for Auto-P&T operation ........................................ 88
2.24 Extracted ion chromatogram for seawater analysed using the automated purge and trap system .................................................. 91
2.25 Purge efficiencies and reproducibility tests for Evian water ................ 94
2.26 Purge efficiencies and carry-over tests for Evian water ........................ 95
3.1 TD-GC-MS linearity tests using EI source P.1. .................................. 103
3.1 TD-GC-MS linearity tests using EI source P.2. .................................. 104
3.2 TD-GC-MS linearity tests using NCI source P.1. .............................. 106
List of Figures

3.2 TD-GC-MS linearity tests using EI source P.2. .......................... 107
3.3 Reproducibility of an IS addition via the Unity2 loop .................. 109
3.4 Carbon tetrachloride measurements in air. ............................... 110
3.5 Changes in instrument response of various VSLH over a two month period . 112
3.6 Permeation oven schematic ................................................. 114
3.7 Permeation tubes with varying permeation window lengths ............. 119
3.8 Long-term stability testing of CH$_3$I in numerous cylinder materials . 121
3.9 Stability of NOAA standard SX-3570 in SilcoCans ....................... 127
3.10 Intercalibration results ...................................................... 132

4.1 Sea surface temperature (SST) along the African coast/ east equatorial
Atlantic during the TROMPEX campaign ................................. 140
4.2 Surface chlorophyll-a concentration along the African coast/ east equatorial
Atlantic during the TROMPEX campaign ................................. 141
4.3 FAAM BAE-146 large research aircraft .................................. 143
4.4 Whole Air Sampling (WAS) cylinders cylinders .......................... 143
4.5 NOAA Hysplit backtrajectories along flight track overlaid onto Chl-a MODIS
February 2009 average ......................................................... 145
4.6 Schematic of the instrument used during TROMPEX .................... 146
4.7 Vertical profiles of measured VSLH, CO and O$_3$ categorised into separate
air mass origins. ................................................................. 149
4.8 MBL concentrations of VSLH over the Mauritanian upwelling region. 150
4.8 MBL concentrations of VSLH over the Mauritanian upwelling region. 151
4.9 CH$_2$ICl concentrations vs. latitude during TROMPEX and RHaMBLe 153

5.1 NOAA ship Kaimimoana in dock at Pearl harbour for mobilisation before
TORERO ................................................................. 158
5.2 Diagram of the East Tropical Pacific (ETP) ............................... 159
5.3 Iodine oxide slant columns retrieved from SCIAMACHY .................. 161
5.4 TORERO cruise track split into three sections highlighting specific sampling
regions ................................................................. 162
5.5 Technical drawing of NOAA vessel Ka’mimoana ......................... 163
5.6 NSF/NCAR Gulfstream V research aircraft .............................. 164
5.7 GV flights intersecting the KA cruise track .............................. 165
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>Turner C6 flurometer and AutoP&amp;T system</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.9</td>
<td>CTD cage for the collection of seawater profiles during TORERO</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.10</td>
<td>Instrumental setup onboard NOAA ship <em>Kaimimoana</em></td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.11</td>
<td>Bow tower sampling inlet for air sampling during TORERO</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.12</td>
<td>Air sampling schematic showing air sample flow path</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.13</td>
<td>Schematic of water instrument setup showing the connection of the Auto-</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>P&amp;T to the ship surface seawater inlet</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.14</td>
<td>Timing diagram for Auto-P&amp;T operation</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.15</td>
<td>NOAA HYSPLIT 315 hour backward trajectory models for the duration of the</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>cruise</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.16</td>
<td>Southern hemisphere NOAA HYSPLIT 315 hour backward trajectory models for</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>the duration of the cruise</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.17</td>
<td>Surface salinity measurements throughout the cruise</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.18</td>
<td>Mean annual ETP surface salinity from bottle, surface and CTD data</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.19</td>
<td>Air temperature measurements throughout the cruise in °C</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.20</td>
<td>Sea surface temperature (SST) measurements throughout the cruise in °C</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.21</td>
<td>Mean annual ETP surface seawater temperature (SST) from bottle, surface,</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>buoy and CTD data</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.22</td>
<td>4 km resolution sea surface temperature (SST) retrieval from NASA MODIS</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aqua satellite</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.23</td>
<td>Ozone concentration (ppb) measured by a Thermo Scientific Model 49i O₃</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>analyser</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.24</td>
<td>12 hour average true wind vectors coloured and scaled to true wind speed</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.25</td>
<td>Difference in mixed layer depths between 22°N, 150°W and 10°N, 110°W</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.26</td>
<td>Hourly averaged chlorophyll-a fluorescence measured using Turner C6</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.27</td>
<td>Chlorophyll-a measured remotely from MODIS and in-situ using a Turner C6</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C6 fluorimeter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.28</td>
<td>Chlorophyll-a retrieval from NASA MODIS Aqua satellite average for the</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>month of February 2012</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.29</td>
<td>4 km resolution chlorophyll-a retrieval from NASA MODIS Aqua satellite</td>
<td>186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.30</td>
<td>Concentrations of VSLH in the air and surface seawater during TORERO</td>
<td>188</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
5.30 Concentrations of VSLH in the air and surface seawater during TORERO p.2 .................................................. 189
5.31 CH$_3$I mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. ........ 190
5.32 CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 191
5.33 CH$_2$I$_2$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 192
5.34 CHCl$_3$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 193
5.35 CH$_2$BrCl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. ... 194
5.36 CHBrCl$_2$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. ..... 194
5.37 CHBr$_2$Cl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 195
5.38 CH$_2$Br$_2$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 195
5.39 CHBr$_3$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a. .... 196
5.40 Vertical profiles from the GV TOGA instrument after an overpass of the KA198
5.41 GV air mass origins .............................................. 199
5.42 Time series of CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios in air overlaid with short-wave irradiance 200
5.43 VSLH hourly diurnal average .................................. 202
5.44 VSLH Northern Hemisphere diurnal 360° SZA average p.1 .............. 203
5.44 VSLH Northern Hemisphere diurnal 360° SZA average p.2 .............. 204
5.45 VSLH Southern Hemisphere diurnal 360° SZA average p.1 .............. 204
5.45 VSLH Southern Hemisphere diurnal 360° SZA average p.2 .............. 205
5.46 Diurnal cycles of CH$_2$ICl in water and CH$_2$I$_2$ in air ................ 206
5.47 Temperature cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N, 110°W .... 208
5.48 Salinity cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N, 110°W .......... 208
5.49 Chl-a fluorescence cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N ..... 209
5.50 Literature CTD casts collected during the PHASE 1 cruise ............... 210
5.51 Conductivity, temperature, depth (CTD) and fluorescence profiles for each degree between 5°N and 5°S along the 110°W TAO buoy line. .......... 211
5.52 VSLH measurements from CTD profiles taken along 110°W p.1 ......... 212
5.52 VSLH measurements from CTD profiles taken along 110°W p.2 ........ 213
5.53 Iodocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N .......... 215
5.54 Chloro/bromocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N .... 217
5.55 Chlorocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N .......... 218
6.1 Simplified schematic demonstrating how surface wind shear could create a negative slope in the correlation between the concentration of short-lived species at the surface and at depth. .............................................. 224
6.2 CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_3$ and CHBr$_2$Cl concentrations at the ocean surface against their maximum concentration during the depth profile for each CTD . . . . 225
6.3 CH$_2$ICl and CH$_3$I$_2$ surface ocean concentrations correlation with concentrations at their respective deep maxima ......................... 225
6.4 CH$_2$ICl vs. CH$_3$I$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ vs. CHBr$_2$Cl concentrations at their respective deep maxima .................................................... 226
6.5 CH$_2$Br$_2$/CHBr$_3$ in depth profiles along 110°W during TORERO. ........ 227
6.6 Modelled CH$_3$I seasonal ocean depth profile ............................... 229
6.7 CCl$_4$ cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N ......................... 230
6.8 % saturation anomaly during TORERO p.1 ................................. 232
6.8 % saturation anomaly during TORERO p.2 ................................. 233
6.9 Comparison of various observations, parameterizations and model predictions of the relationship between wind speed and liquid phase transfer velocity ($K_w$) scaled to a Schmidt number of 660 ......................... 235
6.10 Calculated sea-air fluxes for the TORERO campaign plotted along the cruise track ................................................................. 236
6.11 Calculated sea-air fluxes for the TORERO campaign plotted along the cruise track ................................................................. 238
6.12 Correlations between wind speed and selected VSLH surface water concentrations ................................................................. 244
6.13 CH$_3$I$_2$ surface water concentrations and incoming short wave radiation averaged into 1 m s$^{-1}$ bins ............................................. 245
6.14 Concentrations of CH$_2$ICl and CH$_3$I$_2$ in air ............................ 247
6.15 VSLH flux correlation with wind speed ........................................ 249
6.16 Continued over... ................................................................... 250
6.16 VSLH air concentrations during TORERO vs. wind speed .............. 251
6.17 Wind speed versus CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios at Appledore Island, Japan 252
6.18 Wind speed versus CH$_2$ClI mixing ratios during TORERO ................ 253
6.19 CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios and shortwave radiation averaged into equally weighted bins of 1 m s$^{-1}$ intervals .................................... 254
6.20 Binned solar radiation averages corresponding to individual CH₂ICl air measurements and binned CH₂ICl concentrations .................................. 254
6.21 Literature measurements of equatorial enhancements of MBL bromoform . 256
6.22 CHBr₃ and CH₂Br₂ concentrations in air, water and the subsequent calculated flux from water to air ................................................................. 257
6.23 Modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) ........................................ 258
6.24 GeosChem modelled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) 10/02/2012 . 259
6.25 GeosChem modelled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) 22/02/2012 . 260
6.26 Modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) along the TORERO cruise track ................................................................. 260
6.27 Modeled wind vs. measurements along the TORERO cruise track .......... 261
6.28 CHCl₃ (red circles) and CH₂Br₂ mixing ratios throughout the TORERO campaign ................................................................. 264
6.29 CHCl₃ emissions from anthropogenic sources ........................................ 264
6.30 Ratios of CHCl₃ (top) and CH₂Br₂ (bottom) to CHBr₃ coloured by latitude 266
6.31 CH₂Br₂ modelled using GeosChem across the course of 2012 at 10° increments between 30°S and 30°N along 110°W. ......................... 267
6.32 CHBr₃ modelled using GeosChem across the course of 2012 at 10° increments between 30°S and 30°N along 110°W. ......................... 268
6.33 CHCl₃ and CHBrCl₂ positive diurnal cycles ......................................... 269
6.34 CHBrCl₂ and CHCl₃ diurnal production ............................................. 270
6.35 Correlation between CHBrCl₂ and air temperature .......................... 271
A.1 Mass loss graphs used for calculation of the permeation oven output. ..... 280
A.2 Comparison of CHBr₃/CHBr₂Cl ratio with depth in the Arctic (~ 0°C SST) and the ETP (~ 27°C SST). ....................................................... 281
A.3 Ratios of CHCl₃ (top) and CH₂Br₂ (bottom) to CHBr₃ coloured by salinity 282
A.4 GeosChem ratio of CH₂Br₂ to CHBr₃ coloured by salinity .................. 283
## List of Tables

1.1 Literature measurements of IO from various platforms ........................................ 25
1.2 Summary of iodocarbon data in literature ............................................................ 34
1.3 Seawater solute composition and experimentally derived constants ($\nu_x$) ........ 44
1.4 Increments for use in the Schroeder additive method for calculating $V_b$ ............ 45
1.5 Summary of constants used for VSLH flux calculation ......................................... 47

2.1 Limits of detection for the Unity2–Agilent GC-MS system using EI and NCI sources .................................................................................................................. 75
2.2 Automated purge and trap compound list with typical purge efficiencies and reproducibility ............................................................................................................. 92
2.3 Reproducibility of CTD batch sampled water from 40 m depth ........................ 96
2.4 Difference between CTD and underway sampling ................................................. 97

3.1 Reproducibility of 10 replicate synthetic air samples ............................................. 105
3.2 Material suitability for the analysis of VSLH ....................................................... 113
3.3 Mass loss rates for VSLH permeation tubes ......................................................... 116
3.4 Reproducibility of ten replicate 25 $\mu$L permeation loop injections ................. 118
3.5 Composition and NOAA quoted values for gas standard SX-3570. Provisional scale is based purely on gravimetric data ......................................................... 122
3.6 SX-3570 vs. SX-3576 ............................................................................................. 124
3.7 Stability of VSLH from NOAA SX-3570 stored in SilcoCans ............................. 126
3.8 Comparison of the permeation oven calibration system with NOAA SX-3570128
3.9 Intercalibration details ............................................................................................ 130
3.10 Results of an intercalibration exercise with NCAR ............................................. 135
3.11 Comparison of measured air concentration between KA and GV ..................... 136

4.1 Overview of measured VSLH concentrations ....................................................... 154

6.1 Bulk correlations for all TORERO CTD casts along 110°W from 5°N to 5°S 222
6.2 Measurements required for the calculation of ocean-atmospheric flux ............ 234
6.3 Comparison of different flux calculation techniques ............................................ 237
6.4 Average (range) VSLH flux using a Henry’s law constant calculated for pure water compared to the salinity dependent Henry’s law constant ................ 239
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Table Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>Literature estimates of VSLH fluxes.</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.6</td>
<td>Summary of VSLH fluxes during TORERO</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.7</td>
<td>Contribution of bromine and iodine to the MBL from open-ocean fluxes</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>calculated during TORERO and extrapolated globally.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>Atmospheric lifetimes of various VLSH species</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.9</td>
<td>Sources and sinks of atmospheric chloroform</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Acknowledgements

Firstly, immeasurable thanks must be given to my supervisor, Lucy Carpenter. The time and effort that she has put into this project has provided me with an incredible educational and personal experience for which I will always be in her debt.

Starting at the beginning... Big thanks to the entire atmospheric group especially those present at York when I started. Charlotte Jones, who guided me through my first year, introduced me to the instruments and helped with all those TROMPEX calculations, she is now in Japan. Sam Edwards, for helping with the physical chemistry and for clapping when walking into labs where I was delicately working, cheers! He is now in New Zealand. Marv Shaw, mainly for the drinking/smoking but also the goalkeeping acrobatics. He is now in Lancaster, is it me? Rich Lidster, for his friendship, the banter, road trips, snowboarding holidays, squash games and the crazy experiments, he’s still here of course. Let’s not forget the TORERO campaign; 6 weeks sharing a bunk bed was made bearable by the hilarious giant squid fishing, rocket-flare launching and potato cannon escapades.

All of the PhysChem office, especially Rob and James for the Pub Quiz victories, eating challenges and other, usually drinking related activities. All the newer post-Docs and PhD students: Sina for continuing to push the development of the instruments further and for her terminator-esque fieldwork commitment. Dene for continuing to push the definition of the word “game” of football. Jamie for continuing to push the boundaries of workplace etiquette. Em for being the fastest person ever to learn to snowboard. Shalini for the amazing food when “just popping over for a cup of tea” and Rosie for the marine chemistry knowledge and midnight sun gin and tonic drinking in the Arctic during ACCACIA.

A big thanks to all the “senior” citizens of the atmospheric group! Jimmy, James, Andrew, Ruth, Mustafa, Katie, Martyn (sorry!), Mat, Jacqui and Ally for all the help, campaigns and various opportunities given to me over the years. To all the other BSc, MChem, PhD and post-Docs that I have worked with, you have not been forgotten... I’ve just forgotten your names.

Lastly, but most importantly, my girlfriend Helen who has had to live with me for 3 years now. I don’t know what to say other than thank you for all of your support and love. Now let’s go on that holiday!
Declaration

The research described in this thesis is original work, which I undertook at the University of York during 2009–2013. Except where stated, all of the work contained within this thesis represents the original contribution of the author. Some parts of this thesis have been published in journals; where items were published jointly with collaborators, the author of this thesis is responsible for the material presented here. For each published item the primary author is the first listed author. Publications are listed at the beginning of the chapter to which they relate.
Chapter 1

Introduction
Chapter 1: Introduction

1.1 Preface

Asking a member of the general public what they know about atmospheric chemistry will most likely result in a response quoting “the ozone hole” with some reference to chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs). Like it or not, the role of CFCs in ozone depletion and the subsequent discovery of a hole in the ozone layer has become, and still remains, the public face of atmospheric chemistry.

An understanding into the destructive effects of CFCs came in 1974 from chemists Frank Sherwood Rowland and Mario Molina at the University of California (Molina and Rowland, 1974). In 1985 the Antarctic ozone hole was discovered by Farman, Gardiner and Shanklin, its presence attributed to the transportation of very long-lived CFCs into the stratosphere where they are photolysed to produce molecular chlorine and fluorine resulting in catalytic ozone destruction (Farman et al., 1985).

This was the key event that turned the worlds attention toward atmospheric science and controls were put in place restricting the release of ozone depleting substances following the Montreal Protocol in 1987. This has resulted in the current strict controls, restricting the production and release of these long lived species with high ozone depletion potentials (ODPs). Hydrochlorofluorocarbons (HCFCs) have been developed to phase out the use of CFCs but despite their significantly lower ODPs, they still photolyse in the stratosphere and participate in catalytic ozone destruction cycles. Meanwhile, less emphasis was placed on the very short-lived species which were regarded as having too short an atmospheric lifetime to reach the stratosphere and deplete the ozone layer.

Very short-lived halocarbons (VSLH) mainly photolysed within the troposphere where their chemical role is somewhat different to the processes occurring in the stratosphere. However, due to rapid vertical transport at the equatorial inter-tropical convergence zone (ITCZ) where tropospheric-stratospheric mixing times are shorter, some species of VSLH can be convected fast enough to contribute to the halogen radical abundance into the lower stratosphere and hence participate in O_3 destruction. VSLH play an important role in tropospheric chemistry too. They originate from biogenic as well as anthropogenic sources and both sources and sinks of these reactive compounds must be identified and quantified if tropospheric chemistry is to be fully understood.
1.2 Atmospheric dynamics

The atmosphere can be divided into five principle layers: The troposphere, stratosphere, mesosphere, thermosphere and exosphere. Pressure decays exponentially up to the top of the mesosphere whilst temperature has a distinct vertical profile.

![Temperature profile](image)

**Figure 1.1** – Ozone sonde vertical profile data, 27 August 1997, Trinidad Head, CA. NOAA.

The temperature at the surface of the Earth is high due to absorption of solar radiation, subsequent rising of warm buoyant air and the release of latent heat of condensation during cloud formation. The mixed layer closest to the Earth’s surface is called the boundary layer and its height varies between around 500-1000 m diurnally and depending on location and season. The boundary layer is the part of the troposphere directly influenced by the presence of the Earth’s surface. Emissions from the surface can be convected to the top of the troposphere, the tropopause. The majority of atmospheric dynamics occurs in the troposphere with water vapour condensing as it rises to form clouds and precipitation. Between the surface and the tropopause the temperature decreases due to proximity to
Chapter 1: Introduction

the warm surface of the Earth.

In the stratosphere the temperature begins to increase. This is due to the absorption and release of energy by \( \text{O}_3 \) which is present in high concentrations in the stratosphere and, at its peak concentration, referred to as the ozone layer (figure 1.1). This layer of \( \text{O}_3 \) along with molecular oxygen absorbs radiation in the range 200–310 nm, resulting in only wavelengths longer than this reaching the troposphere and the Earth’s surface. This positive temperature gradient results in little mixing by convection and creates a stable, stratified layer, hence the name stratosphere. In the mesosphere the temperature decreases again due to decreasing \( \text{O}_3 \) concentration until the thermosphere, where increased \( \text{N}_2 \) and \( \text{O}_2 \) absorption at wavelengths < 200 nm causes temperatures to rise (Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts Jr, 1986).

![Figure 1.2 – Satellite observations of the Earth’s energy system from NASA NEO. August 2012 left, February 2012 right. From top to bottom: Net radiation (Blue-Red, Low-High), reflected short wave radiation (Blue-Green-White, Low-High) and outgoing long wave radiation (Blue-Red-Yellow, Low-High).](image-url)
1.2.1 Global Energy Budget

In order for the Earth’s temperature to remain constant its net energy flux must be zero. That is the outgoing, reflected radiation is equal to the incoming radiation. This is called the global energy budget. At the equator, the net radiation flux (incoming minus outgoing) is positive and at the poles it is negative (figure 1.2). This energy and thus temperature gradient between the equator and the poles drives atmospheric circulation. This is also true of the ocean, driving oceanic circulation (section 1.3). If the Earth was a non-rotating sphere, two large convection cells would form with the air at the equatorial surface ascending and moving toward the poles where it cools and descends.

![Figure 1.3 – Representation of atmospheric circulation. From The Atmosphere, Lutgens and Tarbuck, 8th edition, 2001. Colour scheme depicts temperature.](image)

In reality, air circulates in cells where warm air descends at mid-latitudes and, due to the rotation of the Earth, is deflected to the right in the northern hemisphere and to the left in the southern hemisphere. This is known as the Coriolis effect (figure 1.3). The
warm air that converges at the equator is transported rapidly upward and can reach the
tropopause in a matter of days. The convergence of these air masses is called the inter-
tropical convergence zone (ITCZ). Evaporation from the ocean results in high humidity
which combined with strong convection produces an almost permanent cloud band at the
ITCZ which shifts a few degrees north or south of the equator depending upon the time
of year.

1.2.2 Albedo

Low level clouds play an important role in the Earth’s radiation budget because they
reflect incoming solar radiation back into space. The reflectivity of a surface to short-wave
radiation is called its albedo. The influence of surface albedo is significant and is the
reason why the polar regions do not heat to the same temperature as the equator during
their summer season despite being angled toward the Sun as the white, reflective snow and
ice have a high albedo. Albedo is also influenced by human activities such as construction
of buildings and laying of concrete/tarmac. The Earth’s radiation budget is paramount
to atmospheric and ocean dynamics, but also chemistry as most atmospheric reactions
require external energy in some form to proceed.

1.3 Ocean dynamics

As with atmospheric dynamics, the dynamics of the ocean are ultimately driven by solar
radiation. The Sun can drive ocean currents directly through heating the ocean surface or
indirectly from surface wind shear and density gradients from evaporation. Atmospheric
pressure differentials create surface winds which drive surface ocean currents. Surface
winds and solar irradiance heating the oceans causes evaporation of seawater which in-
creases ocean density. Density is the major driving force for ocean circulation.

1.3.1 Thermohaline circulation

Unlike surface currents which are predominately wind driven, the deep ocean currents are
unaffected by wind and are controlled by thermohaline circulation.
Large scale ocean currents are dominated by density gradients caused by differences in temperature (thermo) and salinity (haline). Water sinks in the polar North Atlantic and Southern Ocean. Surface water is cooled by the wind and surface evaporation increases density, causing the water to sink. Sinking water at high latitudes and equatorial warming creates a circulation somewhat analogous to atmospheric circulation. Also, in the same way as the Earth’s surface roughness affects surface wind, the ocean floor affects the flow of deep water during circulation. As the deep water travels it becomes increasingly rich in nutrients which sink from the surface. New, sinking dense water displaces older, nutrient rich water, which is upwelled to the surface, often at equatorial latitudes (section 1.3.3).

Thermohaline circulation plays an important role in regulating the global climate. Cold, nutrient rich upwelled water can produce algal blooms and increased biological activity (Bruland et al., 2001). This can subsequently release atmospherically active gases such as halogens and sulphurs and can exert a control on the concentration of greenhouse gases. Warm surface water moving towards the poles regulates the spatial extent of the polar ice caps, affecting albedo, releasing or trapping gases in the ice and uncovering or covering areas of biologically productive ocean.
1.3.2 Surface Currents

The movement of the ocean at the surface (approximately the top 100–200 m) is driven primarily by momentum gain from surface wind stress. Due to the Coriolis Effect, the direction of movement of the surface water is deflected by a 45° angle to the wind direction. The deflection stops at 45° due to a balance between the wind and the Coriolis force. Water beneath the surface is not in contact with the wind and is only subjected to friction from the water above. Therefore as depth increases, so does the angle of deflection. This is called an Ekman spiral (Figure 1.5).

Figure 1.5 – Ekman spiral in the northern hemisphere. ©2004. Oceanworld, Texas A&M University.

1.3.3 Upwelling

This same effect is responsible for localised upwelling in coastal or equatorial regions. At the equator, opposing trade winds collide at the ITCZ which causes longitudinal movement of warm surface water. This brings cold water up from the deep ocean to replace the displaced warm surface water (figure 1.6). A similar situation occurs at coastlines with persistent winds parallel to the shore. The wind driven surface water movement is deflected away from the coast bringing cold water up to the surface. Coastal upwelling can be seen
along (but not limited to) the Gulf of California, the coast of Mauritania and the coast of Peru. As the cold water is rich in nutrients, upwelling regions display enhanced ocean productivity. Nitrates and phosphates are among the nutrients which limit microalgae and phytoplankton growth. Strong upwelling can cause rapid ‘algal blooms’ with subsequent atmospheric impact (section 1.4.3).

Figure 1.6 – Graphical representation of wind driven coastal and equatorial upwelling. Red arrows represent wind shear, blue arrows show movement of ocean currents. Black arrows represent surface ocean current.

1.4 Atmospheric Compostion

As discussed in section 1.2, the solar radiation spectrum that reaches Earth’s surface ranges from around 300 to > 3000 nm. Within this range solar radiation is attenuated due to absorption and scattering by aerosol particles and gases.

Stratospheric O$_3$ plays an important role in filtering out UV radiation from entering the troposphere. Within the troposphere, O$_3$ is a pollutant and can cause irritation and even damage to the human respiratory system, crops and vegetation (Mills et al., 2011). The formation of O$_3$ in the stratosphere takes place due to the presence of UV radiation with high enough energy to dissociate oxygen from its dimer and follows the Chapman cycle:

\[
O_2 + h\nu \rightarrow O + O \quad \lambda < 240 \text{ nm} \tag{1.1}
\]
Chapter 1: Introduction

\[ O + O_2 + M \rightarrow O_3 + M \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.2)

\[ O_3 + h\nu \rightarrow O(^1D) + O_2 \hspace{1cm} \lambda < 320 \text{ nm} \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.3)

\[ O + O_3 \rightarrow O_2 + O_2 \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.4)

The only source of \( O_3 \) in the troposphere is via the photodissociation of \( NO_2 \) shown in equations 1.5 and 1.6. \( NO_2 \) is formed from NO during the photooxidation of volatile organic compounds (VOCs) (figure 1.7).

\[ NO_2 + h\nu \rightarrow O(^3P) + NO \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.5)

\[ O(^3P) + O_2 + M \rightarrow O_3 + M \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.6)

\[ NO + O_3 \rightarrow NO_2 + O_2 \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.7)

NO can also react rapidly with \( O_3 \) to form \( NO_2 \) as shown in equation 1.7. In a high \( NO_x \) environment with limited VOC, increasing \( NO_x \) would result in a net \( O_3 \) loss.

The VOC photooxidation cycle is initiated by the OH radical, which abstracts a proton to form water and an alkyl radical. The oxidative capacity of the atmosphere is highly dependent upon \( O_3 \) and OH concentration. During daylight, OH is the main tropospheric oxidant and can be described as the ‘Pac-Man’ of the atmosphere due to its high reactivity with CO, \( H_2S \), \( SO_2 \), \( CH_4 \) and other hydrocarbons. OH is produced by the photolysis of \( O_3 \) and subsequent reaction of the electronically excited \( O(^1D) \) atom with \( H_2O \) or \( CH_4 \) (equations 1.8–1.10). Alternatively, \( O(^1D) \) can undergo collisional quenching with \( N_2 \), \( O_2 \) or \( H_2O \) to form \( O(^3P) \) which can react with \( O_2 \) to reform \( O_3 \).

\[ O_3 + h\nu \rightarrow O(^1D) + O_2 \hspace{1cm} (\lambda \leq 310 \text{ nm}) \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.8)

\[ O(^1D) + H_2O \rightarrow OH + OH \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.9)

\[ O(^1D) + CH_4 \rightarrow OH + CH_3 \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.10)

10
The VOC oxidation cycle is completed by the regeneration of OH (figure 1.7). In polluted atmospheres with high NO\(_x\), there is net production of O\(_3\) and OH during the day due to the formation of NO\(_2\) and its subsequent photolysis.

During the night, OH production from the photolysis of O\(_3\) stops and oxidation occurs via the nitrate radical (NO\(_3\)). NO\(_3\) is photolysed extremely rapidly but at night its concentration increases to up to three orders of magnitude larger than day-time OH concentrations (Wayne, 1993) via its production from NO\(_2\) and O\(_3\) (equation 1.11). NO\(_x\) can also be produced from the high energy of a lightning strike dissociating nitrogen and oxygen molecules into their atomic form (Chameides et al., 1977).

\[
\text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO}_3 + \text{O}_2 \tag{1.11}
\]

OH can also be formed in polluted atmospheres by photolysis of HONO and H\(_2\)O\(_2\). In clean atmospheres, such as remote open ocean sites, the production of OH is limited to
the photolysis of \( O_3 \) which in turn is limited by \( H_2O \) and \( CH_4 \). Without \( NO_x \) the only source of \( O_3 \) in these remote regions is from long range transport and entrainment from the stratosphere.

Clearly it is imperative that \( O_3 \) sources and sinks be well constrained if atmospheric chemistry is to be fully understood and modelled. Processes that impact \( O_3 \) concentration in either the troposphere or the stratosphere will have a large influence on the Earth, its climate and ecosystem.

### 1.4.1 Halogen chemistry

Halogen chemistry is atmospherically important for a multitude of reasons. In the stratosphere, \( O_3 \) can be catalytically destroyed by bromine or chlorine (Molina and Rowland, 1974) where the halogen atom is reformd via reaction with atomic oxygen (equations 1.12, 1.13).

\[
Cl + O_3 \rightarrow ClO + O_2 \quad (1.12)
\]

\[
ClO + O \rightarrow Cl + O_2 \quad (1.13)
\]

This reaction proceeds with any halogen and can occur throughout the atmosphere. Stratospheric ozone depletion is currently dominated by CFCs which were designed to be very inert to be used as refrigerants and fire suppressants. Because they are so unreactive they are eventually convected to the stratosphere where wavelengths of light < 220 nm (Minschwaner et al., 2012), present in the stratosphere but attenuated through the troposphere, provide enough energy to break the covalent bond between chlorine and carbon.

Heterogeneous reactions also play an important role in stratospheric ozone depletion with reactions on sulphate aerosol, uptake of \( HNO_3 \) by the sulphate, subsequent growth and the formation of polar stratospheric clouds (PSC) (Molina et al., 1993). These clouds consist as liquid or solid \( HNO_3 \) and \( H_2O \) and can convert reservoir chlorine compounds such as \( CIONO_2 \) and \( HCl \) into reactive species (Hanson and Ravishankara, 1991) via equations
1.4 Atmospheric Composition

1.14 and 1.15.

\[ \text{HCl}_{(ads)} + \text{ClONO}_2(g) \xrightarrow{\text{PSC}} \text{HNO}_3(\text{abs}) + \text{Cl}_2(g) \]  
\[ \text{(1.14)} \]

\[ \text{ClONO}_2(g) + \text{H}_2\text{O}_{(abs)} \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3(\text{abs}) + \text{HOCl}_(g) \]  
\[ \text{(1.15)} \]

PSC also remove NO\textsubscript{2} which serves to decrease the formation of ClONO\textsubscript{2}.

Stratospheric ozone depletion is not just limited to chlorine. Bromine is about 60 times more effective than chlorine in depleting O\textsubscript{3} (Law and Sturges, 2007). Iodine has an even higher ozone depletion potential (ODP) of 150–300 times that of chlorine (Ko et al., 2003) but stratospheric injection is much less likely due to its reactivity.

1.4.1.1 Tropospheric halogen chemistry

In the troposphere, halogen reactions influence the capacity of the atmosphere to oxidise numerous organic and inorganic species. This is due to the products of the photodissociation of O\textsubscript{3} forming OH which then oxidises VOCs (section 1.4). Halogen atoms catalytically deplete O\textsubscript{3} via their reaction to form halogen oxide radicals which can then be reduced back to their atomic form photolytically or by reaction with NO, HO\textsubscript{2} or XO (where X is a halogen). Tropospheric halogen chemistry is estimated to deplete around 10% of the tropical tropospheric ozone column and contributes approximately -0.1 W m\textsuperscript{-2} to the radiative flux at the tropical tropopause due to O\textsubscript{3} acting as a greenhouse gas (Saiz-Lopez et al., 2012).

\[ X_2 + h\nu \rightarrow 2X \]  
\[ \text{(1.16)} \]

\[ X + O_3 \rightarrow XO + O_2 \]  
\[ \text{(1.17)} \]

\[ XO + h\nu \rightarrow X + O \]  
\[ \text{(1.18)} \]

\[ XO + XO \rightarrow X_2 + O_2 \]  
\[ \text{(1.19)} \]

(where XO can also be a different halogen, YO)

\[ XO + NO \rightarrow X + NO_2 \]  
\[ \text{(1.20)} \]
Halogen oxides are rapidly photolysed back to a halogen and an oxygen atom (equation 1.18 which can reform O$_3$ so it is the subsequent reactions of XO (equations 1.19–1.24) which lead to a net O$_3$ loss. In addition to the catalytic destruction of O$_3$, halogen oxides can react with HO$_2$ and NO$_2$ which play an important role in the formation of O$_3$, NO$_3$ and OH (equations 1.21 and 1.22). Open-ocean marine boundary layer (MBL) iodine oxide (IO) has been observed at mixing ratios up to 1.5 pptv (Read et al., 2008). Another effect on tropospheric O$_3$ concentration is from the enhancement of dry deposition of O$_3$ into surface seawater by the presence of I$^-$ in the seawater (Jones and Carpenter, 2005; Carpenter et al., 2013).

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{XO} + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{HOX} & (1.21) \\
\text{XO} + \text{NO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{XONO}_2 & (1.22) \\
\text{XO} + \text{XO} & \rightarrow \text{X}_2\text{O}_2 \xrightarrow{hv} \text{OXO} & (1.23) \\
\text{XO} + \text{XO} & \rightarrow \text{OXO} \xrightarrow{OH} \text{HXO}_3 & (1.24)
\end{align*}
\]

Iodine oxide and iodine dioxide radicals can also combine to form IOPs (iodine oxidation particles) which can then condense (Burkholder et al., 2004; Saunders and Plane, 2006; Saunders et al., 2010). If these IOPs act as cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) (section 1.4.5) they can affect albedo and the Earth’s radiative budget (section 1.2.2).

Recently, attention has been drawn to iodine mediated oxidation of gaseous elemental Hg$^0$ to reactive gaseous Hg$^{II}$ in the polar atmosphere (figure 1.11). Hg$^{II}$ is toxic and can be bioaccumulated in large predatory fish such as Tuna (Selin, 2009).

1.4.2 Halogen oxides and the ozone budget

As discussed, bromine and iodine oxide play an important role in ozone depletion in the troposphere and stratosphere. As there are many processes involved subsequent to the release of Reactive Halogen Species (RHS) into the atmosphere (figure 1.11), models are used to understand and attempt to quantify the effect they have on ozone concentrations. Figure 1.8, calculated from measurements at the Cape Verde observatory, highlights the
importance of RHS when trying to constrain the MBL ozone budget with IO and BrO removing between 1-2 ppbv O$_3$ d$^{-1}$. The contribution of RHS to the stratosphere is extremely difficult to quantify but it is possible that even iodine chemistry to some degree, plays an active role in stratospheric ozone destruction (Solomon et al., 1994).

The sources and sinks of IO are not well defined. IO can be measured in the atmosphere but we do not yet have a comprehensive account of where it is coming from to balance the IO budget. It is clear that halogens play an important role in tropospheric ozone depletion but the known sources of reactive iodine, such as organic iodine species, cannot explain the IO concentrations observed (Mahajan et al. (2010), figure 1.9). In order for models to match observations of diurnal ozone destruction, both iodine and bromine chemistry must be factored in (Read et al., 2008). Thus, to accurately model ozone, the global atmospheric halogen budget must be closed.
Figure 1.9 – Reproduced from Mahajan et al. (2010). Top: Measured IO concentrations from Differential Optical Absorption Spectroscopy (DOAS), observations shown as circles, solid line represents modeled IO using iodocarbon flux and dashed lines highlights the extra I\(_2\) flux required for models to match observations. Below: The effect of including this extra I\(_2\) flux on modeled O\(_3\) compared to observations.
1.4.3 Sources of Reactive Halogen Species

The most well-known and significant, for stratospheric ozone, source of halogens into the atmosphere is from long-lived halogenated compounds including CFCs, CCl$_4$, HCFCs, and anthropogenic halons as well as long-lived compounds which are produced both naturally and anthropogenically such as methyl bromide and chloride. The Montreal Protocol has resulted in the phasing out of CFC emissions, although small emissions from ‘banks’ in existing applications such as refrigerators, air conditioning units, and foams still occur (Montzka et al., 2011). Atmospheric abundance and emissions of HCFCs, which along with HFCs are CFC replacements, are increasing (Montzka et al., 2009), although these deplete much less ozone per kilogram than CFCs. The global budget of these long-lived halogenated species is reasonably well constrained.

The oceans are a major natural source of very short-lived halogenated species into the boundary layer (Ordóñez et al., 2012). The budget of VSLH is much harder to constrain than long-lived compounds and a deeper understanding of their photochemical cycles, from production to destruction, is required. In the lower atmosphere, the Br and Cl burden is also strongly enhanced by heterogeneous reactions occurring on halide-rich marine sea salt and sulphate aerosol (von Glasow and Crutzen, 2007) with lesser contributions to inorganic bromine from terrestrial dust aerosol, biomass burning and fossil fuel production (Sander et al., 2003).

1.4.4 Marine Aerosol

Marine aerosol can be broadly defined as particles encountered above a marine environment. These may also include terrestrial aerosol such as dust and particles of anthropogenic origin transported into the marine environment within their atmospheric lifetime. An important example of terrestrial aerosol impacting the marine environment is the deposition of iron from dust aerosol into high nutrient low chlorophyll (HNLC) waters where the lack of iron limits phytoplankton growth (Jickells et al., 2005). Marine aerosols can be primary aerosols formed mechanically, such as from sea spray, or secondary aerosols formed via the reaction of ocean derived trace gases.

Heterogeneous reactions on aerosol, or salty ice surfaces in polar regions, liberate $X_2$
Chapter 1: Introduction

and the interhalogens XY (where Y is a different halogen atom to X) and this has been hypothesised as the main source of bromine in the MBL through an auto-catalytic cycle known as the bromine explosion (Fan and Jacob, 1992; McConnell et al., 1992; Platt and Lehrer, 1997; Tang and McConnell, 1996; Wennberg, 1999).

As marine aerosol originates mainly from sea-spray their elemental compositions should be comparable, with similar amounts of inorganic salts such as sulphate and chloride. In fact, aqueous marine aerosol often contains a depleted chloride and bromide ratio to sodium (Duce et al., 1991; Sturges and Barrie, 1988; Baker et al., 2000). This discovery led to the theory that chlorine and bromine partition from marine aerosol into the gas phase due to acid-catalysed reactions (Keene et al., 1998, and references therein). Within the aerosol, iodine is present as iodide and iodate with a significant fraction of soluble, organically bound iodine (Baker, 2005). Sander et al. (2003) observed that large aerosols do not show bromine enhancement, medium sized aerosols (a few micron) show depletion and that sub-micron aerosol are enriched in bromine (Santos and Rast, 2013).

Aerosols provide an effective route for the recycling of BrONO$_2$ due to its fast hydrolysis to form HOBr (figure 1.11, Aguzzi and Rossi (1999)). This hydrolysis produces nitric acid and contributes to aerosol acidity (equation 1.25). Hydrolysis of BrONO$_2$ and direct uptake of HOBr in aerosol leads to the formation of Br$_2$ and the interhalogens, this requires the presence of halide ions and protons (equation 1.26, Santos and Rast (2013)) and thus is pH dependant (Abbatt and Waschewsky, 1998; Huff and Abbatt, 2002; Deiber et al., 2004; Pratte and Rossi, 2006; Sander et al., 2003). The main control on sea salt aerosol pH is from sulphate acidification and the main source of sulphate in marine environments is DMS (Davis et al., 1998). Santos and Rast (2013) show that without gas-phase sulphur chemistry, bromine mediated ozone destruction would increase by 80% due to the sulphur mediated acidification of aerosol. This also highlights the control of compounds such as DMS on halogen chemistry and that changes in their atmospheric concentrations could strongly influence ozone levels.

\[
\text{BrONO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HOBr}_{(aq)} + \text{HNO}_3(aq) \tag{1.25}
\]

\[
\text{HOBr}_{(aq)} + \text{Br}^-_{(aq)} + \text{H}^+_{(aq)} \leftrightarrow \text{Br}_2(aq) + \text{H}_2\text{O}_{(aq)} \tag{1.26}
\]
1.4.5 New Particle Formation

New particle formation has been observed in chamber studies from the photoxidation of $\text{CH}_2\text{I}_2$ (Jimenez et al., 2003). Iodine has also been linked to new particle formation in coastal regions via correlation with periods of low tide and solar radiation (Hoffman et al., 2001). Coastal brown algae such as *Laminaria digitata* can release $\text{I}_2$ during low tide (Saiz-Lopez and Plane, 2004). They bio-accumulate iodide and release iodine as an antioxidant during stress from reactive oxygen species (Küpper et al., 2008, 2013). The subsequent reactive iodine released into the atmosphere forms oxidation products such as $\text{OIO}$ which can nucleate, coagulate and eventually form cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) (O’Dowd et al., 2002; Pechtl et al., 2006). The resultant cloud formation positively impacts albedo and the MBL radiative budget.

MBL IO and OIO concentrations are not sufficient to account for any substantial new particle formation and it was predicted that localised, high concentration “hot spots” were required (Burkholder et al., 2004). New particle formation has been observed at Mace Head, Ireland (Heard et al., 2006) and in Roscoff, Brittany (McFiggans et al., 2010).
1.4.6 Direct Oceanic Flux of RHS

$I_2$, $Br_2$, HOI and HOBr can be released as a direct product of haloperoxidase in micro and macro algae (Hill and Manley, 2009). In coastal regions, direct emission of $I_2$ from kelp is the dominant source of reactive iodine (McFiggans et al., 2004; Leigh et al., 2010). $I_2$ as well as HOI has also been suggested to be emitted from the ocean via reaction of ozone with iodide on the sea surface. Emission of iodocarbons and $I_2$ from the ocean alone cannot explain observed IO concentrations.

Carpenter et al. (2013) suggest that, in real world conditions with low sea surface $I^-$ concentrations, the equilibrium between HOI and $I_2$ lies toward HOI, thus despite having a Henrys Law constant $\sim 160 \times$ lower than $I_2$, HOI concentrations in surface water result in a significant flux into the atmosphere. Combined emission of HOI, $I_2$ and iodocarbons, including equilibrium with the atmosphere, can explain the observed concentrations of IO (Carpenter et al., 2013). Despite an ever growing understanding of iodine sources, the general consensus is that the global source of iodine to the atmosphere is currently underestimated (Saiz-Lopez and von Glasow, 2012).
1.4.7 Very Short-Lived Halocarbons (VSLH)

A significant amount of reactive halogen entering into the atmosphere derives from short-lived organic halogens which are released from a multitude of sources including rice paddies and wet-lands (Redeker et al., 2000) but a dominant contribution originates from the oceans (Quack and Wallace, 2003). Very short-lived halocarbons (VSLH) are defined as having atmospheric lifetimes of $< 6$ months (Law and Sturges, 2007) which is of the same order of magnitude as tropospheric transport times. That is, the concentration in the troposphere depends upon the strength and proximity to the source. VSLH can be biogenic or anthropogenic. Anthropogenic sources can be measured and even controlled, whereas biogenic sources are currently neither comprehensively understood nor consistently quantified. VSLH are significant sources of reactive halogens to the troposphere and lower stratosphere and make an important contribution to photochemical ozone depletion (von...
Glasow et al., 2004; Yang et al., 2005; Montzka et al., 2011; Saiz-Lopez et al., 2012). They are readily photolysed to form halogen atoms by wavelengths of radiation present within the troposphere. VSLH are present at pptv level concentrations in the MBL and pmol dm$^{-3}$ levels in the surface ocean (section 1.7).

In the free troposphere, biogenic bromocarbon decomposition is predicted to reduce ozone levels by 5-30% via catalytic ozone destruction via bromine oxide radicals (BrO) and reduced ozone production due to BrO reactions with nitrogen oxides (von Glasow et al., 2004; Yang et al., 2005). BrO can also oxidise dimethyl sulphide (DMS) to form DMSO which can subsequently form CCN (Boucher et al., 2003).

1.4.8 VSLH sources and sinks

Organic halogens are released from marine macro algae (Chance et al., 2009; Goodwin et al., 1997; Carpenter et al., 2000; Carpenter and Liss, 2000; Sturges et al., 1993; Schall et al., 1994; Leedham et al., 2013), from phytoplankton (Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994), from marine bacteria and detritus (Hughes et al., 2008; Asare et al., 2012) and via photochemical breakdown of dissolved organic matter (DOM) in the surface ocean (Happell and Wallace, 1996; Richter and Wallace, 2004). Within marine diatom cultures, VSLH are formed via bromoperoxidase and iodoperoxidase enzymes (Moore et al., 1996). However there are major uncertainties regarding the contribution from these different sources (Carpenter and Liss, 2000). The global distributions and controls of VSLH emissions are also not well known, exacerbated by large spatial variability in sea-air fluxes. VSLH loss processes are controlled by photolysis, oxidation by hydroxyl radicals or oceanic and terrestrial dry deposition.

1.4.9 Transport of VSLH

An important difference between VSLH and longer-lived species is that the ability of VSLH to deplete stratospheric O$_3$ is dependent upon transport time whereas the longer-lived species are stable in the troposphere and are only photolysed in the stratosphere where solar energy is greater ($\lambda \leq 310$ nm). A model calculation suggests that 70% of oceanic CH$_2$Br$_2$ and 28% of CHBr$_3$ emissions reach the tropical tropopause layer (TTL)
(Gettelman et al., 2009). Under normal atmospheric conditions most shorter-lived VSLH will be photolysed within the troposphere however certain circumstances result in rapid vertical transport to the TTL.

![Figure 1.11](image-url) – Adapted from Holzer and Polvani (2013). Modeled vertical transport of a constant oceanic emission of short-lived species. Row a shows mixing of three species with different chemical lifetimes ($\tau_c$) averaged through December, January and February. Row b shows the same for June, July and August. Colour scale is arbitrary, White line indicates the mean tropopause level.

Rapid vertical transport occurs primarily at the equator along the ITCZ (see section 1.2.1). The convergence of northern and southern hemispheric convection cells causes rapid uplifting of air along the equator. This can also occur extra-tropically via weather system frontal uplift. With boundary layer (BL) to tropical tropopause layer (TTL) transport times at the equator as short as 10–30 days, VSLH emitted at equatorial regions can potentially reach the stratosphere. Kritz et al. (1993) measured $^{222}$Radon, produced at the Earth’s surface with a half-life of 3.8 days, in the lower tropical stratosphere where extremely rapid vertical transport out of the boundary layer was provided by tropical cyclones and overshooting convective clouds.

Bromine and iodine transport to the stratosphere is of increased importance as per-atom,
they are about 60 and 150–300 times more effective than chlorine at depleting O$_3$, respectively (Law and Sturges, 2007; Ko et al., 2003). The lifetimes of iodine containing VSLH are less than 10 days and thus they are likely to be photolyzed within the troposphere. Secondary organic reaction products from VSLH are likely to have such short lifetimes that direct conversion to reactive halogen species from the degradation of VSLH may be assumed (Montzka et al., 2011).

The input of reactive bromine to the lower stratosphere is estimated between 1.1–7.6 ppt (Montzka et al., 2011) whereas no significant quantity of iodine is expected. Holzer and Polvani (2013) find that the globally averaged flux into the stratosphere normalized by surface emissions is $\sim$1% for a species such as CH$_3$I ($\tau_c$=8 days) and 30% for $\tau_c$ $\sim$140 days (CH$_2$Br$_2$, CH$_2$BrCl, CHCl$_3$) (figure 1.11). 1% is approximately equal to 0.01 ppt globally and in agreement with Tegtmeier et al. (2013a)

Butz et al. (2009) and Dorf et al. (2008) measured stratospheric upper limit IO and BrO concentrations of <0.1 ppt and 10–20 ppt, respectively from a balloon.

1.4.10 Halogen monoxide in the atmosphere

Due to its extremely short atmospheric lifetime (E. and Barna, 1997) and low mixing ratio, there are very few measurements of IO (table ??). Recently, satellite retrievals have been used to measure IO although these measurements lie close to the detection limit of the instrument (Schönhardt et al. (2008), see chapter 5 section 5.1.1). Aircraft measurements locate two-thirds of total column IO above the MBL and suggest that most of the signal observed from satellites originates from IO in the free-troposphere (Dix et al., 2013). Detection of IO has predominantly been using the Differential Optical Absorption (DOAS) technique which measures absorption bands in the UV-Vis spectral region (Hönninger et al., 2004). Long path (LP) DOAS uses a fixed light source focused and projected over a very large distance (km), essentially the spectroscopic path length. IO at altitude or vertical profiles profiles can be measured using the Multi-Axis (MAX) DOAS technique which uses solar radiation as the spectroscopic light source.
### Table 1.1 – Literature measurements of IO from various platforms

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Instrument</th>
<th>Conc. (ppt)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Land-based</td>
<td>Tenerife, Spain (2010)</td>
<td>MAX-DOAS</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>Puentedura et al. (2012)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland</td>
<td>LP-DOAS</td>
<td>3.5–6.5</td>
<td>Alicke et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland</td>
<td>LP-DOAS</td>
<td>1.17</td>
<td>Allan et al. (2000)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maldives (1999)</td>
<td>MAX-DOAS</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>Großmann et al. (2013)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tenerife, Spain (1997)</td>
<td>LP-DOAS</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>Allan et al. (2000)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tasmania (1999)</td>
<td>LP-DOAS</td>
<td>0.88</td>
<td>Allan et al. (2000)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Neumayer, Antarctica</td>
<td>MAX-DOAS</td>
<td>6.5(^1)</td>
<td>Frieß et al. (2001)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Halley, Antarctica</td>
<td>LP-DOAS</td>
<td>0–20</td>
<td>Saiz-Lopez et al. (2007b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ship Bourne</td>
<td>Eastern Pacific (2010)</td>
<td>MAX-DOAS</td>
<td>0.9(^2)</td>
<td>Mahajan et al. (2012)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Western Pacific (2009)</td>
<td>MAX-DOAS</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>Großmann et al. (2013)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Airbourne</td>
<td>Balloon, Northern Brazil, Stratosphere</td>
<td>LPMA-DOAS</td>
<td>&lt;0.1(^3)</td>
<td>Butz et al. (2009)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satellite</td>
<td>Antarctic</td>
<td>SIAS SCIAMACHY</td>
<td>0–12</td>
<td>Saiz-Lopez et al. (2007a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antarctic</td>
<td>SIAS SCIAMACHY</td>
<td>0–20</td>
<td>Schönhardt et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Equatorial</td>
<td>SIAS SCIAMACHY</td>
<td>0–5</td>
<td>Schönhardt et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 \(^1\) Maximum concentration  
2 \(^2\) Maximum daily mean  
3 \(^3\) Upper limit
1.5 Bromocarbons, Chlorocarbons and Iodocarbons

VSLH can be broadly divided into three groups, iodocarbons, bromocarbons and chlorocarbons. Here an iodocarbon is defined as an organic halogen that can supply iodine to the atmosphere, sources of iodine are far fewer than those of bromine and the C–I bond is the most likely to be cleaved first in a reaction thus CH$_2$IBr is classified as an iodocarbon as it does not provide a significant source of bromine to the atmosphere when compared to other bromocarbons. The same applies to differentiating bromocarbons from chlorocarbons where CHBrCl$_2$ is a bromocarbon and CHCl$_3$ is a chlorocarbon. Field studies have as of yet not shown any clear correlation between iodocarbons and bromocarbons (table 1.2 and references therein) despite the similarity of known sources (section 1.4.8).

1.5.1 Bromocarbons

In the lower stratosphere, 5–40% of the bromine present is thought to derive from VSLH entering via rapid vertical transport from the marine boundary layer (MBL) (Kritz et al., 1993; Montzka et al., 2011). Stratospheric bromine contribution from VSLH will herein be referred to as Br$_y^{\text{VSLH}}$. A multitude of models have attempted to assess Br$_y^{\text{VSLH}}$ contribution to the stratosphere and estimates continue to improve with better constraint of sources and sinks of bromocarbons from measurements (Dvortsov et al., 1999; Salawitch et al., 2005; Kerkweg et al., 2008; Brioude et al., 2010; Hossaini et al., 2012b; Liang et al., 2010; Schofield et al., 2011).

1.5.2 Bromoform (CHBr$_3$) and dibromomethane (CH$_2$Br$_2$)

CHBr$_3$ and CH$_2$Br$_2$ are the most prominent bromocarbons present in the MBL and as such have been the subject of the greatest number of measurements (section 1.7). They can be formed from many sources including from bromoperoxidase in oceanic micro/macro algae (Itoh et al., 1997; Wever et al., 1991). Hossaini et al. (2012b) estimate a contribution of 4.9–5.2 ppt Br$_y$ from CHBr$_3$, CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_2$Cl, CHBrCl$_2$, CH$_2$BrCl and C$_2$H$_5$Br of which CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ contribute 76% of Br$_y$. These two VSLH are of notable importance due to their relatively large emissions and the long lifetime of CH$_2$Br$_2$ compared to other VSLH.
CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} and CHBr\textsubscript{3} have local atmospheric lifetimes of approximately 123 and 24 days, respectively (Law and Sturges, 2007). The former has a predominately OH sink with a lifetime of $\tau_{OH} = 5000$ days (using average tropospheric OH of $1 \times 10^6$ molecules cm\textsuperscript{-3}). The latter is mainly photolysed ($\tau_{\nu} = 36$ days) but does also react with OH ($\tau_{OH} = 76$ days). Model studies quantifying the supply of bromine from CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} and CHBr\textsubscript{3} to the stratosphere estimate around 2.4–2.5 ppt (2.4 ppt Hossaini et al. (2010), 2.5 ppt Liang et al. (2010)). Warwick et al. (2006) and Schofield et al. (2011) include CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl, CHBrCl\textsubscript{2} and CH\textsubscript{2}BrCl in their models and calculate 6–7 pptv Br\textsubscript{VSLH} (Hossaini et al., 2012b). CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} and CHBr\textsubscript{3} emissions are expected to be predominately biogenic in origin and due to the well-studied correlation between them (Carpenter et al., 2003; Yokouchi et al., 2005; Carpenter et al., 2009) it is assumed that they have similar sources or at least source regions.

1.5.3 Iodocarbons

In the tropical MBL, reactive iodine has been shown to be an important control in the photochemical destruction of ozone (Read et al., 2008; Mahajan et al., 2009; Jones et al., 2010). Methyl iodide, propyl iodide, diiodomethane and chloroiodomethane (CH\textsubscript{3}I, C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{5}I, CH\textsubscript{2}I\textsubscript{2} and CH\textsubscript{2}ICl) are the primary organic sources of iodine atoms. The monohalogenated iodocarbons such as CH\textsubscript{3}I have the longest lifetimes compared to the polyhalogenated species for which the C–I bond is easily cleaved. Organic sources are believed to contribute 20–25% of reactive iodine to the tropical MBL (Carpenter et al., 2003; Mahajan et al., 2010; Jones et al., 2010).

Observations from the Cape Verde Atmospheric Observatory (16°51’N, 24°52’W) in the tropical east Atlantic Ocean indicate that reactive halogen chemistry increases surface photochemical ozone destruction by ca. 50% and is widespread in this region (Read et al., 2008). CH\textsubscript{3}I is thought to be the most significant organic source of iodine to the MBL due to its greater concentration compared to the other iodocarbons (Tegtmeier et al., 2013b). However, polyhalogenated iodocarbons are so rapidly photolysed that measurements need to be taken very close to source to detect them before they release their reactive halogen into the atmosphere. CH\textsubscript{2}I\textsubscript{2} is also capable of releasing both of its halogen atoms either by photolysis or by oxidation via CH\textsubscript{2}IO\textsubscript{2} to form CH\textsubscript{2}IO, which can readily photolysed to release the second iodine (Kroger et al., 1976). As the sources of polyhalogenated
iodocarbons are still uncertain it is difficult to estimate their global emission and thus they may be a significantly greater source of reactive iodine than previously thought.

### 1.5.3.1 Methyl iodide

Methyl iodide undergoes photolysis at wavelengths between 300–340 nm and has an atmospheric lifetime of approximately 7 days in tropical regions (Montzka et al., 2011). OH is not a major sink with $\tau_{OH} = 158$ days (Montzka et al., 2011). The lifetime of CH$_3$I is similar to the timescale for ventilation of the marine boundary layer (Bell et al., 2002a) and as such has been used as a tracer of marine convection. CH$_3$I has been detected up to 12 km altitude (Blake et al., 1999) which can be attributed to extremely rapid vertical transport when considering its atmospheric lifetime. Using the Lagrangian transport model FLEXPART initiated with surface ocean measurements, Tegtmeier et al. (2013a) predict around 0.01–0.02 ppt entrainment of CH$_3$I to the stratosphere.

The main anthropogenic source of CH$_3$I is from its use as a pesticide replacing CH$_3$Br in the United States (Pelley, 2009) as 29% of CH$_3$I applied to soil can directly volatilise back into the atmosphere (Luo et al., 2011). However, Japanese manufacturers are currently no longer supplying CH$_3$I to the US (Arysta LifeScience Corp.Tokyo).

CH$_3$I differs from other VSLH because its production is thought to be mainly photochemical (Moore and Zafiriou, 1994). CH$_3$I is also released from macroalgae (Laturmus et al., 1998; Giese et al., 1999; Moore and Tokarczyk, 1993; Peters et al., 2005; Nightingale et al., 1995), microalgae (Itoh et al., 1997; Moore et al., 1996) and phytoplankton (Moore and Tokarczyk, 1993; Manley and de la Cuesta, 1997) although these sources are small; 0.5 Gg yr$^{-1}$ of CH$_3$I is emitted from kelp (Manley and Dastoor, 1987) with distribution limited to coastal regions (Wang et al., 2009). CH$_3$I can be formed in the surface ocean from photo-chemically produced radical recombination (Moore and Zafiriou, 1994; Happell and Wallace, 1996; Chuck et al., 2005; Yokouchi et al., 2008) (equation 1.27). Bell et al. (2002a) suggest that CH$_3$I produced photochemically in the ocean is removed via emission to the atmosphere and by reaction with Cl$^-$ with a net CH$_3$I flux to the MBL of 214 Gg yr$^{-1}$.

\[
\text{CH}_3 + \text{I} \xrightarrow{h\nu} \text{CH}_3\text{I} \quad (1.27)
\]
1.5 Bromocarbons, Chlorocarbons and Iodocarbons

CH$_3$I also has a terrestrial source (estimated at 32–83 Gg yr$^{-1}$, Bell et al. (2002a)) from rice paddies (20–71 Gg yr$^{-1}$), wetlands (7.3 Gg yr$^{-1}$), biomass burning (3.4 Gg yr$^{-1}$) and peatlands (1.4 Gg yr$^{-1}$). Sive et al. (2007) estimate a 2600 ng m$^{-2}$ d$^{-1}$ (315 Gg yr$^{-1}$) flux from the oceans and a similar, 2270 ng m$^{-2}$ d$^{-1}$ terrestrial source strength. However, the area of terrestrial emission is much smaller, resulting in a 33 Gg yr$^{-1}$ flux, less than 10 times that of the ocean. Williams et al. (2007) suggest the production of CH$_3$I from the addition of Saharan dust to seawater and Amachi et al. (2001) show that marine and terrestrial bacteria are capable of methylating iodide to form CH$_3$I.

1.5.3.2 Polyhalogenated iodocarbons

CH$_2$I$_2$, CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$IBr are produced from similar marine biogenic sources as CH$_3$I such as macro/micro algae and phytoplankton (Carpenter et al., 2001) however the size and global distribution of the sources of these species are still unknown. CH$_2$I$_2$, CH$_2$ICl and CH$_3$I can be produced via interaction of dissolved iodide, dissolved organic mater (DOM) and ozone in the sea surface (Martino et al., 2009). CH$_2$I$_2$ is present at extremely low concentrations in surface water and has only recently been measured in open-ocean air (Jones et al., 2010) due to its photolytic lifetime of 0.003 days. CH$_2$ICl can be formed via the $S_N2$ chlorination of CH$_2$I$_2$ (Class and Ballschmiter, 1988), direct photolysis (Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994) and also directly from macroalgal (Moore and Tokarczyk, 1993; Klick, 1993; Laturnus, 1996; Carpenter et al., 2000; Baker et al., 2001), plankton (Klick and Abrahamsson, 1992; Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994; Moore et al., 1996; Yamamoto et al., 2001) and bacterial sources (Amachi et al., 2005a,b).

As a product of the formation of CH$_2$I$_2$ and due to its longer lifetime ($\tau_{h\nu} = 0.1$ days), CH$_2$ICl is more easily measured and can be linked to CH$_2$I$_2$ sources. In the Northwest Atlantic, CH$_2$ICl has been shown to increase toward open ocean regions and display higher concentrations away from coastal regions, which is the opposite of most other VSLH (Andrews et al., 2013). In fact the highest measured CH$_2$ICl concentration (0.71 ppt) to date is over the open Atlantic Ocean on-board the RV Polarstern (Chuck et al., 2005). This highlights the potential role of phytoplankton production of CH$_2$ICl (Moore and
Tokarczyk, 1993). CH$_2$IBr has been measured in coastal and Arctic regions (Carpenter et al., 2003, 2005) but is usually the least abundant of the poly-halogenated iodocarbons and is rarely seen in the open ocean.

The polyhalogenated iodocarbons can provide a global iodine source similar in magnitude to CH$_3$I (Jones et al. 2010). Because these species have such short local lifetimes they release their iodine atoms within the boundary layer providing a surface ocean source 3–4 fold higher than from CH$_3$I. In the case of CH$_2$I$_2$, photolysis likely occurs in the water column, surface or within the first few meters of the atmosphere.

### 1.5.4 Halocarbon exchange

Due to the ready availability of halogen ions present in seawater, VSLH can undergo halocarbon exchange processes. CH$_2$I$_2$ forms CH$_2$ICl in artificial seawater in the presence of light $>290$ nm but does not form in darkness (Class and Ballschmiter, 1987) which suggests the substitution of iodine is photochemically driven. Theoretically, a multitude of halocarbon exchange reactions can take place in the ocean in the presence of sunlight (figure 1.12). This scheme would suggest that unless a species transitions into the gas phase it will eventually form chloroform or dichloromethane.

![Figure 1.12 – Potential halocarbon exchange reactions in the ocean in the presence of sunlight.](image-url)
Models assume a variety of scenarios (Bell et al., 2002b; von Glasow et al., 2004; Yang et al., 2005; Warwick et al., 2006; Kerkweg et al., 2008; Liang et al., 2010) for oceanic VSLH emissions, characterised according to geographical region. These require better validation by global oceanic and atmospheric measurements. Organic sources from VSLH and inorganic sources from sea-salt aerosols or oceanic surfaces (Carpenter et al., 2013) need to be better constrained due to their high spatial and temporal variability. Due to limited datasets, models use basic assumptions for VLSH fluxes which may not be entirely valid, such as the assumption of a constant 2.5 fold larger flux over coastal regions compared to open-ocean in the CAM-Chem based model by Ordóñez et al. (2012). Although this is the first model that attempts to incorporate iodocarbon species, other than CH$_3$I, into a global model.

![Figure 1.13](image-url) – Global bromoform atmospheric mixing ratio map for February 2012 predicted by the GeosChem model.

Tropospheric chemistry models incorporating bromocarbons, such as GeosChem, make similar assumptions (Liang et al., 2010). GeosChem assumes a fixed, non-meteorology driven flux per unit of time with enhanced emissions between 20° north and south of the
equator, in line with measurements over this region (Quack and Wallace, 2003; Quack et al., 2004, 2007a; Class and Ballschmiter, 1988; Atlas et al., 1993). Limited seawater measurements prohibit the use of modelled fluxes as used for species such as DMS which have much larger measurement datasets. The GeosChem model also assumes a greater coastal vs. open ocean source based upon a distance from shore, a relationship highlighted in Carpenter et al. (2009).

Better understanding of the underlying processes involved in halogen chemistry is required in order to predict the impact of environmental change on emissions. Hossaini et al. (2012a) predict that the stratospheric source gas injection of VSLH will likely increase in response to climate change.

1.7 VSLH in literature

CH$_3$I, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ are fairly well studied and a large amount of data has been compiled in the HalOcAt database project (GEOMAR, Kiel). From all the collated data, a grid-based approach estimates a mean atmospheric mixing ratio of 0.7 ppt (0.05–7.3) for CH$_3$I, 1.0 ppt (0.07–7.8) for CH$_2$Br$_2$ and 0.9 ppt (0.01–53.1) for CHBr$_3$ (Ziska et al., 2013). This value of 0.7 ppt for CH$_3$I compares well to the combined means from individual open ocean studies shown in table 1.2 (0.74 ppt). This would suggest that open ocean concentrations contribute the majority of the emission source and that despite coastal areas being strong local sources, their global contribution is less significant. This is investigated in chapter 4 at the Mauritanian upwelling region.

Much effort has been given to the compilation of the HalOcAt database but there are still large geographic areas where no data exists. There is a notable lack of data in the Indian Ocean, Arctic Ocean and the south east Pacific. Data from TORERO (chapter 5) fills a gap in the longitudinal coverage in the East Tropical Pacific where only the latitudinal transect of BLAST I (1994) exists. Air and seawater concentrations measured during the 2013 ACCACIA campaign will provide novel measurements in the Greenland Sea. Including these measurements however, there is still a lack of data from the Southern Hemisphere, especially in the Indian and Pacific Oceans.

The shorter lived iodocarbons CH$_2$ICl and CH$_3$I$_2$ have very limited global data coverage
due to the difficulties measuring their extremely low concentrations and producing accurate calibrations. Measurements of these species and CH$_3$I have been compiled in table 1.2. Open ocean measurements of the shortest lived species are extremely sparse and without more measurements and greater understanding as to the sources, sinks and related processes we cannot hope to model or predict their global atmospheric distribution.
Chapter 1: Introduction

Table 1.2 – Summary of iodocarbon data in literature

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Mean (ppt)</th>
<th>Range (ppt)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>Coastal</td>
<td>1.47</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Spitzbergen, Norway</td>
<td>1.04</td>
<td>&lt;0.004–2.12</td>
<td>Schall and Heumann (1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (spring)</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.12–1.47</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (summer)</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>1.9–8.7</td>
<td>Bassford et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (summer)</td>
<td>3.78</td>
<td>1.3–12.0</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (2003)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>1.0–7.3</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (2003)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia</td>
<td>0.53</td>
<td>0.14–0.9</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Okinawa, Japan</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.5–2</td>
<td>Li et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific and Atlantic Coast</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.4–1.6</td>
<td>Butler et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Appledore Island, United States</td>
<td>1.39</td>
<td>1.3–1.5</td>
<td>Sive et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>NW Pacific Islands</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>0.1–4.5</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>San Cristobal Island, Ecuador</td>
<td>1.13</td>
<td>0.53–2.55</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antarctic Peninsular</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>0.6–7.9</td>
<td>Heumann et al. (1992)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Barrow, Alaska</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Meares</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Kumakahi</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Marshall Island</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Samoa</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tasmania</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South pole</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rasmussen et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hateruma Island</td>
<td>0.82</td>
<td>0.3–1.69</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2001)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia (summer)</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td></td>
<td>Krummel et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia (autumn)</td>
<td>1.43</td>
<td></td>
<td>Krummel et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia (winter)</td>
<td>1.21</td>
<td></td>
<td>Krummel et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia (spring)</td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td></td>
<td>Krummel et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Coastal waters</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.4–1.6</td>
<td>Butler et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Ochiishi</td>
<td>0.98</td>
<td>0.2–4.47</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tsukuba</td>
<td>1.16</td>
<td>0.35–4.32</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Happo Ridge</td>
<td>0.51</td>
<td>0.09–1.36</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hateruma Island</td>
<td>0.77</td>
<td>0.28–1.88</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Syowa</td>
<td>0.24</td>
<td>0.01–0.53</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lilja</td>
<td>7.6–1830</td>
<td></td>
<td>Peters et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Dagebull</td>
<td></td>
<td>4.7–23.5</td>
<td>Peters et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gran Canaria</td>
<td></td>
<td>24–84</td>
<td>Eldahl et al. (1998)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Great Bay, New Hampshire, US</td>
<td>1.43</td>
<td>0.44–3.1</td>
<td>Zhou et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Ochiishi</td>
<td>0.81</td>
<td>0.12–5.2</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hateruma Island</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.43–5.2</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>1.55</td>
<td>0.90–3.29</td>
<td>Fuhlerbrügge et al. (2013)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Open ocean</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>East and Southeast Asian seas</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>0.24–2.0</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (1997)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Western Pacific</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>0.05–5.0</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (1997)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

34
## 1.7 VSLH in literature

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Mean (ppt)</th>
<th>Range (ppt)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Cl</td>
<td>Coastal</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (spring)</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>&lt;0.02–0.21</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (summer)</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>&lt;0.02–0.50</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Spitzbergen, Norway</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.02–0.12</td>
<td>Schall and Heumann (1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Norfolk, UK</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>0.21–0.8</td>
<td>Baker et al. (2001)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Grim, Australia</td>
<td>1.42</td>
<td>0.94–2.61</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (2003)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lilia</td>
<td>0.35–12.4</td>
<td></td>
<td>Peters et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gran Canaria</td>
<td>nd–19</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ekdahl et al. (1998)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Dagebull</td>
<td>0.1–3</td>
<td></td>
<td>Peters et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Appeldore Island, US</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.01–1.6</td>
<td>Varner et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Thompson Farm, US</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.03–3.4</td>
<td>Varner et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Christmas Island</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.03–0.24</td>
<td>Varner et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oahu, Hawaii</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.01–0.07</td>
<td>Varner et al. (2008)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Roscoff, France</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.03–0.17</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2009)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Outer Hebrides, UK</td>
<td>1.42</td>
<td>0.94–2.61</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hateruma island, Japan</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>nd–0.99</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Ochiishi, Japan</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>nd–2.1</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mauritania upwelling</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.4–0.7</td>
<td>Andrews et al. (2013)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Open ocean</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North East Atlantic 26-36degN</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>&lt;0.01–0.07</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North East Atlantic 15-25degN</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>&lt;0.02–0.04</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Atlantic and Southern Oceans</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.18–0.71</td>
<td>Chuck et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>NE Atlantic (shelf)</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>&lt;0.08–0.88</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>West of Cape Verde</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>nd–0.4</td>
<td>Andrews et al. (2013)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I$_2$</td>
<td>Location</td>
<td>Value</td>
<td>Reference</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coastal</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North East Atlantic</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.02–0.18</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (spring)</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>&lt;0.02–0.36</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (1999)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland (summer)</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>&lt;0.02–0.46</td>
<td>Carpenter et al. (1999)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spitzbergen, Norway</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>&lt;0.08–1.02</td>
<td>Schall and Heumann (1993)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roscoff, France</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.01–0.07</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2009)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Outer Hebrides, UK</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.02–0.18</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cape Ochiishi, Japan</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>nd–0.4</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hateruma island, Japan</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>nd–0.07</td>
<td>Yokouchi et al. (2011)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Open ocean

North East Atlantic | 0.01 | <0.009–0.01 | Jones et al. (2010) |
1.8 Ocean-Atmosphere Exchange

The flux of a gas across the ocean–atmosphere interface is calculated from its concentration gradient across the two layers and its transfer velocity. This can be conceptualised as a two layer film system proposed by Liss and Slater (1974). In this system the concentrations of the gas of interest in air ($C_A$) and water ($C_W$) are assumed to be homogeneous. The concentrations on either side of the sea-air interface ($C_{SA}$ and $C_{SW}$) are in equilibrium and controlled by molecular diffusion through the liquid and gas interfacial layers.

![Diagram](image)

**Figure 1.14** – Two layer model of a gas–liquid interface (Liss and Slater, 1974).

The concentration gradient can be measured directly by the simultaneous analysis of water and air. The transfer velocity ($K$, cm h$^{-1}$) is a function of wind speed ($u$, m s$^{-1}$):

$$K = f(u)S_c^{-n}$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.28)

Where $S_c$ is the Schmidt number, a ratio of the kinematic viscosity and gas diffusivity (Jähne et al., 1984) scaled to $n$ which represents the degree of renewal of the surface layers due to turbulent mixing (Johnson, 2010).
Chapter 1: Introduction

The reciprocal of the transfer velocity of a gas between the two phases, known as the total transfer velocity ($K_t$), represents the resistance encountered as it passes through each phase and results in separate transfer velocities for the liquid and gas phases, $K_W$ and $K_A$ respectively:

\[
\frac{1}{K_t} = \frac{1}{K_W} + \frac{1}{H_{AW} K_A}
\] (1.29)

Where $H_{AW}$ is the dimensionless gas-over-liquid form of the Henry’s law constant (See chapter 1.8.3). Hence flux ($F$) can be calculated using equation 1.30, where $C_W$ and $C_A$ are the concentrations of the gas in the liquid and gas phases respectively (mol cm$^{-3}$).

\[
F = K_t (C_W - \left( \frac{C_A}{H_{AW}} \right))
\] (1.30)

### 1.8.1 Gas phase transfer velocity, $K_A$

The parameterization for $K_A$ (m s$^{-1}$) used here is taken from Johnson (2010) and is derived in part, from Duce et al. (1991), Jeffery et al. (2007) and uses the Smith (1980) term for the drag coefficient, $C_d$. This parameterization accounts for a non-linear wind speed relationship and assumes that at zero wind speed, transfer is exclusively diffusive (Eq. 1.31):

\[
K_A = 1 \times 10^{-3} + \frac{u_*}{13.3 S_{CA}^{1/2} + C_D^{-1/2} - 5 + \frac{\ln(S_{CA})}{2 \kappa}}
\] (1.31)

Where $\kappa$ is the von Karman constant (0.4 for seawater), $S_{CA}$ is the Schmidt number in air and $u_*$ is the friction velocity which is related to wind speed ($u$) and the drag coefficient ($C_D$) by equation 1.32 (Smith, 1980).
1.8 Ocean-Atmosphere Exchange

\[ C_D = \left( \frac{u_*}{u_{10}} \right)^2 \]  
(1.32)

\[ u_* = u_{10} \sqrt{6.1 \times 10^{-4} + 6.3 \times 10^{-5} u_{10}} \]  
(1.33)

\( u_* \) is calculated from equation 1.32 and a wind tunnel derived parameterization by Mackay and Yeun (1983) to yield equation 1.33. \( u_{10} \) is the wind speed at 10 m ASL. The Schmidt number in air can be calculated using:

\[ S_{cA} = \frac{\eta_A}{(\rho_A \times D_A)} \]  
(1.34)

Where \( \eta_A \) is the dynamic viscosity of air \((\approx 1.82 \times 10^{-5} \text{ kg m}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1})\), \( \rho_A \) is the density of air \((\approx 1.2 \text{ kg m}^{-3})\) and \( D_A \) is the diffusivity of the gas of interest in air \((\text{cm}^2 \text{ s}^{-1})\) which can be calculated from Equation 1.35 (Fuller et al., 1966).

\[ D_A = 0.001 \times T^{1.75} \frac{M_r^{0.5}}{[(PV_A^{\frac{1}{2}}) + V_b^{\frac{1}{2}}]^2} \]  
(1.35)

Where \( V_A \) and \( V_b \) are the molar volumes of air and the gas of interest respectively \((\text{cm}^3 \text{ mol}^{-1})\), \( P \) is the pressure in atmospheres and \( M_r \) is a function of the molecular masses of air \( (M_A) \) and the gas of interest \( (M_b) \), as described in equation 1.36.

\[ M_r = \frac{M_A + M_b}{M_AM_b} \]  
(1.36)

39
Chapter 1: Introduction

The density of air ($\rho_A$) is temperature and humidity dependent. Water vapor is lighter than air, thus as the percentage water vapor in air increases, the density decreases as the amount of air decreases per unit volume. $\rho_A$ can be calculated using equation 1.37 if measured values for relative humidity (%RH, $\Phi$) are known.

$$\rho_A = \frac{P_{\text{dry}}}{R_{\text{dry}}T} + \frac{P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}}{R_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}T} \quad (1.37)$$

Where $P_{\text{dry}}$ and $P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}$ are the partial pressures (Pascal, Pa = 100 mbar) and $R_{\text{dry}}$ and $R_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}$ are the specific gas constants (287.058 and 461.495 J kg$^{-1}$ K$^{-1}$) of dry air and water vapor respectively. $T$ is the air temperature in Kelvin. Values of $P_{\text{dry}}$ and $P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}$ can be calculated using:

$$P_{\text{dry}} = P_{\text{abs}} - P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}} \quad \text{and} \quad P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}} = \Phi P_{\text{sat}} \quad (1.38)$$

Where $P_{\text{abs}}$ is the absolute (measured) atmospheric pressure.

The dynamic viscosity of air ($\eta_A$), as with $\rho_A$, is also temperature and humidity dependent. It can be calculated from an adaption of a formula according to Studnikov (1970) (equation 1.39) which itself is based upon an empirical formula for the calculation of the thermal conductivity of mixtures containing a polar solvent, in this case H$_2$O.

$$\eta_A = (x_A \times \eta_{\text{dry}}) \left(1 + \frac{x_{\text{H}_2\text{O}} - x_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}^2}{\vartheta} \right) \quad (1.39)$$

Where $x_A$ and $x_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}$ are the mole fractions of air and water respectively in the humid air mixture. $x_{\text{H}_2\text{O}} = P_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}/P_{\text{abs}}$ as calculated in equation 1.38 and $x_A = 1 - x_{\text{H}_2\text{O}}$. 40
\( \eta_{\text{dry}} \) is the dynamic viscosity of dry air, equation 1.40 and \( \vartheta \) is an experimentally derived constant (2.75).

\[
\eta_{\text{dry}} = \eta_0 \frac{T_0 + C}{T + C} \left( \frac{T}{T_0} \right)^{\frac{3}{2}}
\]  

Where \( C \), \( T_0 \) and \( \eta_0 \) are reference values for air. \( C \) is Sutherland’s constant for air (120 K), \( T_0 \) is the reference temperature (291.15 K), \( \eta_0 \) is the reference viscosity (18.27 \( \mu \)Pa.s) and \( T \) is the actual (measured) temperature (in K).

### 1.8.2 Liquid phase transfer velocity, \( K_W \)

For the majority of relatively insoluble gases studied in flux estimates the resistance of gas transfer exerted by the water is far greater than that of the air, therefore \( \frac{1}{K_A} \) is negligible, thus \( K_T \approx K_W \). Hence the far greater number of parameterizations for \( K_W \) available compared to that of \( K_A \). This rate controlling phase boundary can be attributed to the solubility and chemical reactivity of the gas of interest, with air-side resistance exerting a greater control on highly soluble and/or reactive gases in the aqueous phase (Liss and Slater, 1974).

\( K_W \) has been parameterized using direct micro-meteorological methods, global \(^{14}\)C as a tracer and by deliberately adding one or more tracers into the atmosphere and ocean such as \(^3\)He and SF\(_6\). The latter approach was used by Nightingale et al. (2000) who provide the most widely used parameterization of \( K_W \) to date:

\[
K_W = (0.222u_{10}^2 + 0.333u_{10}) \left( \frac{S_{AW}}{S_{c\ 660}} \right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}
\]  

which scales the Schmidt number of the gas of interest in water \( (S_{cW}) \) to 660 — the Schmidt number of CO\(_2\) in saltwater at 20\(^\circ\)C \( (S_{c\ 660}) \). \( S_{AW} \) can be estimated in equation 1.42, as
applied by Khalil et al. (1999) and Yokouchi et al. (2001). Where $M$ is the molecular weight of the gas of interest and $T$ is the sea surface temperature (SST, °C).

$$S_{cW} = 335.6M^{\frac{1}{2}}(1 - 0.065T + 0.002043T^2 - 2.6 \times 10^{-5}T^3) \quad (1.42)$$

A more complex approach for calculating $S_{cW}$ which takes salinity into account is presented in Johnson (2010) and uses the same relationship as used when calculating $S_{cA}$ (equation 1.43). Dissolved salts in seawater reduce gas solubility leading to an increased partitioning into the gas phase, known as the “salting out” effect (Xie et al., 1997). The opposite can occur (“salting in”) as salts increase the polarity of water where the more non-polar the solute, the greater it is influenced by solvent polarity (Ni and Yalkowsky, 2003).

$$S_{cW} = \frac{\eta_{SW}}{\rho_W D_W} \quad (1.43)$$

$\rho_W$ is the density of water (kg m$^{-3}$) which, in this case, is seawater. $\rho_W$ can be calculated with equation 1.44 from Millero and Poisson (1981) using the temperature and salinity measured at the same time as the gas of interest.

$$\rho_W = \rho_0 + A.S + B.S^2 + C.S \quad (1.44)$$

Where $S$ is the salinity and $\rho_0$ is the density of pure water which is calculated using Equation 1.45. $A$, $B$ and $C$ are calculated using Equations 1.46–1.48.
\[ \rho_0 = 999.842594 + 0.06793952T - 9.09529 \times 10^{-3}T^2 \\
+ 1.001685 \times 10^{-4}T^3 - 1.120083 \times 10^{-6}T^4 + 6.536332 \times 10^{-9}T^5 \] (1.45)

\[ A = 0.824493 - 0.040899T + 7.6438 \times 10^{-5}T^2 \\
- 8.2467 \times 10^{-7}T^3 + 5.3875 \times 10^{-9}T^4 \] (1.46)

\[ B = -0.00572466 + 1.0277 \times 10^{-4}T - 1.6546 \times 10^{-6}T^2 \] (1.47)

\[ C = 4.8314 \times 10^{-4} \] (1.48)

\( \eta_{SW} \) (cP) represents the dynamic viscosity of seawater (in cP = centipose = \( 10^{-3} \) kg m\(^{-1}\) s\(^{-1}\)). This variable includes the dynamic viscosity of each salt (\( \eta_i \)) as a mass fraction of total salinity combined with the dynamic viscosity of pure water (\( \eta_0 \)) to yield equation 1.49 (Laliberté, 2007).

\[ \ln(\eta_{SW}) = w_0\ln(\eta_0) + \sum w_i\ln(\eta_i) \] (1.49)

Where \( w_0 \) and \( w_i \) represent the mass fraction of water and each solute in solution respectively. The dynamic viscosities of pure water and of each salt individually are calculated according to equations 1.50 and 1.51 respectively.

\[ \eta_0 = \frac{T + 246}{0.05594T^2 + 5.2842T + 137.37} \] (1.50)
\[ \eta_i = \frac{\nu_1 (1 - w_0)^{\nu_2 + \nu_3}}{\nu_4 (1 - w_0)^{\nu_5 + 1}} \]  

(1.51)

\( \nu_1 - \nu_6 \) are empirical constants for each solute in seawater from Laliberté (2007) as presented in table 1.3 and \( T \) is the temperature in °C.

### Table 1.3 – Seawater solute composition and experimentally derived constants \((\nu_x)\).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Solute</th>
<th>mass fraction ((w))</th>
<th>(\nu_1)</th>
<th>(\nu_2)</th>
<th>(\nu_3)</th>
<th>(\nu_4)</th>
<th>(\nu_5)</th>
<th>(\nu_6)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NaCl</td>
<td>0.798</td>
<td>16.22</td>
<td>1.3229</td>
<td>1.4849</td>
<td>0.0074691</td>
<td>30.78</td>
<td>2.0583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCl</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>6.4883</td>
<td>1.3175</td>
<td>-0.7785</td>
<td>0.09272</td>
<td>-1.3</td>
<td>2.0811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaCl(_2)</td>
<td>0.033</td>
<td>32.028</td>
<td>0.78792</td>
<td>-1.1495</td>
<td>0.0026995</td>
<td>780860</td>
<td>5.8442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MgCl(_2)</td>
<td>0.047</td>
<td>24.032</td>
<td>2.2694</td>
<td>3.7108</td>
<td>0.021853</td>
<td>-1.1236</td>
<td>0.14474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MgSO(_4)</td>
<td>0.100</td>
<td>72.269</td>
<td>2.2238</td>
<td>6.6037</td>
<td>0.0079004</td>
<td>3340.1</td>
<td>6.1304</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Finally, we must calculate \(D_W\) \((\text{cm}^2 \text{ s}^{-1})\). Following the scheme suggested in Johnson (2010), \(D_W\) is averaged from the mean of two methods presented by Wilke and Chang (1955) (equation 1.52) and Hayduk and Minhas (1982) (equation 1.53 and 1.54).

\[ D_W = \frac{7.4 \times 10^{-8} T \sqrt{\phi M_W}}{\eta_{SW} V_b^{0.6}} \]  

(1.52)

\[ D_W = 1.25 \times 10^{-8} T^{1.52} \eta_{SW} \epsilon^*(V_b^{-0.19} - 0.292) \]  

(1.53)

\[ \epsilon^* = \frac{9.58}{V_b} - 1.12 \]  

(1.54)
Where $M_W$ is the relative molecular mass of the seawater, $\eta_S W$ is its dynamic viscosity in units of cP, $\phi$ is the association factor of water (2.6), $T$ is the temperature in Kelvin and $V_b$ is the liquid molar volume at boiling point of the gas of interest (cm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$). $V_b$ can be calculated using the Schroeder additive method where $V_b = \sum increment$ where the increments are listed in Table 1.4.

**Table 1.4** – Increments for use in the Schroeder additive method for calculating $V_b$. *Any cyclic feature to only be applied to each summation only once.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Atom/feature</th>
<th>Increment (cm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Carbon</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxygen</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitrogen</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bromine</td>
<td>31.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chlorine</td>
<td>24.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluorine</td>
<td>10.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iodine</td>
<td>38.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sulphur</td>
<td>21.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ring*</td>
<td>-7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Double bond</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Triple Bond</td>
<td>14.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1.8.3  Henry’s law

Formulated in 1803 by William Henry, Henry’s law describes the solubility of a gas as being directly proportional to its partial pressure. Henry’s law constants in pure water for most atmospheric gases are available in the publication “Compilation of Henry’s Law Constants for Inorganic and Organic Species of Potential Importance in Environmental Chemistry” (Sander, 1999). These constants can be described as a function of temperature (equations 1.55) and are then converted into the dimensionless gas-over-liquid form \( K_H^\infty \) by equations 1.55–1.57.

\[
K_H = K_H^\infty \times \exp \left( -\frac{\delta_{\text{soln}} H}{R} \left( \frac{1}{T} - \frac{1}{T^\infty} \right) \right) \tag{1.55}
\]

Where:

\[
\frac{\delta_{\text{soln}} H}{R} = \frac{-\ln K_H}{d(\frac{1}{T})} \tag{1.56}
\]

\[
H_A^W = \frac{1}{C_W/C_A} = \frac{1}{K_H \times RT} \tag{1.57}
\]

Where \( K_H^\infty \) refers to standard conditions \((T^\infty, 298.15 \text{ K})\) and \( R \) is the gas constant \((12.2 \text{ M atm}^{-1} \text{ K}^{-1})\).

1.8.3.1  Salinity dependent Henry’s Law

In seawater the Henry’s Law constants in pure water are affected by salinity via equation 1.58:

\[
K_H = K_{H,0} + 10^{(K_S S)} \tag{1.58}
\]
Where $K_{H,0}$ is the dimensionless gas over liquid form of the Henry’s law constant for pure water and $K_S$ is the Setschenow constant (Setschenow, 1889) defined in equation 1.59:

$$K_S = \theta \ln(Vb)$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.59)

A numerical scheme by Johnson (2010) provided a close fit to measurements of $K_S$ by estimating $Vb$ (molar volume, cm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$) using the “Schroeder” additive method and solving equation 1.59 for $\theta$. Here $K_{H}^{\ominus}$ is the dimensionless gas over liquid form of the Henry’s law constant at 298.15 K. They then provide a cubic relationship between $\theta$ and $\ln(K_{H}^{\ominus})$ (equation 1.60).

$$\theta = 7.33532 \times 10^{-4} + 3.39615 \times 10^{-5} \ln(K_{H}^{\ominus})$$
$$- 2.40888 \times 10^{-6}(\ln(K_{H}^{\ominus}))^2 + 1.57114 \times 10^{-7}(\ln(K_{H}^{\ominus}))^3$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.60)

### Table 1.5 – Summary of constants used for VSLH flux calculation.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>$M_R$</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>$K_{H}^{\ominus}$</th>
<th>$\frac{d \ln K_H}{dT}$</th>
<th>$v_b$ (cm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\rho$ (g cm$^{-3}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>141.94</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>4300</td>
<td>66.5</td>
<td>2.279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$ICl</td>
<td>176.38</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.89</td>
<td>4300</td>
<td>84.0</td>
<td>2.416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I$_2$</td>
<td>267.84</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>2.30</td>
<td>5000</td>
<td>98.0</td>
<td>3.325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>119.38</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>3800</td>
<td>87.5</td>
<td>1.483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_4$</td>
<td>153.82</td>
<td>Hansen et al., 1995</td>
<td>0.034</td>
<td>3600</td>
<td>105.0</td>
<td>1.587</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl$_2$</td>
<td>163.83</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.40</td>
<td>4700</td>
<td>94.5</td>
<td>1.980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_2$Cl</td>
<td>208.28</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>4900</td>
<td>101.5</td>
<td>2.451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>173.84</td>
<td>Moore et al, 1995</td>
<td>0.93</td>
<td>4400</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>2.477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_3$</td>
<td>252.73</td>
<td>Staudinger &amp; Roberts, 1996</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>5200</td>
<td>108.5</td>
<td>2.89</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1.9 Summary

Very short-lived halocarbons are significant sources of reactive halogen to the troposphere and lower stratosphere and make an important contribution to photochemical ozone depletion. They are released from marine sources including macro algae, phytoplankton, bacteria and surface photochemical processes. However there are major uncertainties regarding the contribution from these different sources. The global distributions and controls of VSLH emissions are also not well known, exacerbated by large spatial variability in sea-air fluxes.

In the lower stratosphere, 5-40% of the bromine present is thought to derive from VSLH entering via rapid vertical transport from the marine boundary layer (Kritz et al., 1993; Montzka et al., 2011). Due to greater convection, emissions at tropical latitudes are more likely to reach the stratosphere, hence identification of major bromocarbon sources in this region is of significant global atmospheric importance. Inorganic bromine from biogenic organohalogen decomposition is predicted to reduce tropospheric ozone levels by 5-30% via catalytic ozone destruction by bromine oxide radicals (BrO) and reduced ozone production due to BrO reactions with NO$_x$ species (Yang et al., 2005).

In the tropical MBL, reactive iodine has shown to be an important control in the photochemical destruction of ozone (Read et al., 2008). $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$, $\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{I}$, $\text{CH}_2\text{I}_2$ and $\text{CH}_2\text{ICl}$ are the primary organic sources of iodine atoms in the MBL, although these precursors do not explain the total reactive iodine abundance at the surface (Jones et al., 2009; Mahajan et al., 2009).
Chapter 2

Instrumental Analysis of VSLH in Air and Water

2.1 Overview

Gas Chromatography coupled to a Mass Spectrometer (GC-MS) was the main analytical technique used throughout this body of work. This chapter will describe the basic operation of GC-MS systems, how this theory translates to actual instrumentation and how the instruments were developed to meet the analytical needs of this project.
2.2 Chromatography

The basic principle of chromatography has remained fundamentally unchanged since its invention by Mikhail Tsvet at the beginning of the 19th century. The most basic example being the separation of a mixture of pigments by their differing rates of diffusion through blotting paper, an experimental demonstration often seen in primary education. These principles are analogous to those employed in even the most modern of chromatographic technology today.

The ocean and atmosphere are extremely complex sample matrices where by utilising chromatography, individual analytes such as VSLH can be isolated, characterised and quantified. A mixture of analytes is carried via the mobile phase (a transport medium) through a system containing a stationary phase. The speed at which each analyte travels through the system is dependent upon its partitioning between the mobile and stationary phases. An analyte which interacts with the stationary phase is said to be ‘retained’ and one which travels through the system without partitioning into the stationary phase is unretained. Once the analyte has passed through the system it has ‘eluted’ and is either collected or measured using a detector. The less retention, the sooner an analyte will elute.

With regard to gas chromatography (GC), the mobile phase is a gas, usually helium, and the stationary phase is a silicone based substrate contained within a polyimide coated, fused silica column. The type of interaction between the analytes and the stationary phase is controlled by the stationary phase material and determines the order of analyte elution. Non-polar columns will separate according to increasing boiling point. Adding polar functional groups such as phenyls to a column’s stationary phase will increase the retention of polar analytes. The speed at which an analyte elutes through a column is also dependent upon the temperature and the flow rate of the mobile phase. The GC column is commonly placed inside a fan oven which allows accurate temperature control and hence control over the speed of elution during a GC run.
2.2 Chromatography

2.2.1 Chromatographic theory

An analyte \( A \) moving through a GC column is in constant equilibrium between the mobile phase \( A_{\text{mobile}} \) and the stationary phase \( A_{\text{stationary}} \). Its speed is dependent on the equilibrium constant between the two phases known as the partition coefficient \( K \).

\[
A_{\text{mobile}} \overset{K}{\rightleftharpoons} A_{\text{stationary}}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.1)

The equilibrium constant is directly proportional to the capacity factor \( k' \), a measure of the columns ability to retain a specific analyte.

\[
k' = \frac{t_R - t_M}{t_M}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.2)

The longer an analyte is retained \( t_R \) compared to an unretained analyte \( t_M \), the greater the capacity factor of the column. If an analyte is retained on a column, logic dictates that increasing the length of the column \( L \) will increase the retention time and the dead time. To describe the efficiency of a column with respect to analyte separation a theoretical “plate” model is used. This model visualises a column as being divided into a number of equal parts or ‘plates’ \( N \). The number of plates, the plate height \( H \) and the column length \( L \) are used to define the efficiency.

\[
N = \frac{L}{H}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.3)

The smaller and more numerous the plates and the longer the column; the greater the efficiency. The efficiency can be calculated in practice using equation 2.4 where \( W \) is the peak width measured at the baseline.

\[
N = 16 \left( \frac{t_R}{W} \right)^2
\]  \hspace{1cm} (2.4)

The parameters which affect plate height \( N \), and thus efficiency, are described by the van Deemter equation (equation 2.5, van Deemter et al. (1956)). As the analytes move
through the column they are subject to band broadening. A narrow band of analyte will spread out as it travels due to eddy diffusion (A), longitudinal diffusion (B) and the mass transfer term (C).

\[ H = A + \frac{B}{u} + Cu \]  \hspace{1cm} (2.5)

The Eddy diffusion term (A) describes the multiple pathways through a column. Some may be shorter than others and consequently molecules taking differing routes will elute at slightly different times. This is only applicable to a packed GC column. The diffusion coefficient (B) is the diffusion of an analyte longitudinally along the column within the carrier gas. The mass transfer term (C) is the sum of the resistance encountered as the analyte transitions into and out of the stationary phase and is analogous to the transfer velocity term used in flux calculations (section 1.8). \( u \) is the linear velocity of the carrier.

\[ \text{Resolution} = \frac{2(t_{R1} - t_{R2})}{W_1 + W_2} \]  \hspace{1cm} (2.6)

Resolution in chromatography describes the separation time achieved between two analytes (1 and 2) as they elute from the column. Resolution is determined by the difference in retention times of the two analytes (\( \Delta T_R \)) and the peak widths according to equation 2.6. Narrower peaks and greater separation results in higher resolution. A resolution value of at least 1.5 is desirable for baseline separation and accurate quantification.

### 2.3 Mass spectrometry

A mass spectrometer (MS) is an instrument used to determine the mass to charge ratio \((m/z)\) of an analyte. For mass spectral analysis a sample is first ionised. Depending on the type of ionisation used, the sample can gain single or multiple charges and even fragment into multiple ions. The mass of the intact analyte (parent ion), and/or its fragments, provides an insight into the analytes composition. All MS (with the exception of ion mobility mass spectrometry) require a vacuum so that the ion can travel through the system with minimum collisions. The greater the vacuum, the better the transmission and more ions will reach the detector, resulting in greater sensitivity.
2.3 Mass spectrometry

The mass is usually measured by one of two techniques: filtering the ions so that only one specific mass passes through the system (quadrupole, magnetic sector and ion trap) or by measuring the time in which it takes an ion to travel through a vacuum chamber of set length (Time Of Flight, TOF). Both techniques employ a simple detector such as an electron multiplier to count the number of ions passing through the system. Filtering the ions simplifies their detection but only allows for one mass to be observed at any one time whereas TOF can measure multiple masses simultaneously.

In order to accurately identify an analyte in a mixture, its mass must be measured with extremely high resolution. This is due to numerous compounds having the same nominal mass whereas none (excluding isomers) have identical accurate masses. For example: methyl iodide and decane both have the same nominal mass of 142 but can be identified by their more accurate masses of 141.94 and 142.28, respectively. However, an MS with high resolution is required for accurate mass determination such as a magnetic sector or a TOF with an adequately long flight tube, both of which are expensive relative to lower resolution MS such as quadrupole. In addition, the introduction of a complex mixture would produce an extremely complicated mass spectrum, especially if fragmentation of the parent ion was to occur.

An alternative way to achieve greater resolution is to couple the MS to a chromatography system (GC/LC-MS). Here the extra resolution is achieved by the separation of analytes (including isomers) chromatographically before their introduction into the MS. This virtually eliminates the problem of a complex mixture and the successful identification of an analyte can be aided by considering its retention time in the chromatographic system (see section 2.2.1).

A capillary GC is very easy to couple to an MS as it outputs a gas at low flow rates, which can be introduced directly to the high vacuum environment of an MS. A liquid chromatography–MS interface was a greater challenge as the liquid solvent must be removed before entering the MS, as it would create huge quantities of gas, and decrease the vacuum.

A high resolution MS can be coupled to a chromatographic system and is a powerful analytical tool for the identification and quantitation of unknown compounds. A low resolution quadrupole MS (QMS) was used throughout this research for multiple reasons. Firstly, if
Chapter 2: Instrumental Analysis of VSLH in Air and Water

the structure of an analyte is known, high resolution MS is not required for identification and does not necessarily increase sensitivity. Higher resolution would increase selectivity but complete chromatographic separation negates this requirement. QMS systems are cheaper to buy, run and have smaller physical footprints than high resolution MS, which make them more suitable for use in fieldwork. A QMS was deployed on the Mars Rover Curiosity for the same reasons (Leshin et al., 2013).

2.3.1 Quadrupole Mass Spectrometry (QMS)

A quadrupole can be referred to as a mass spectrometer or often as a mass filter. The latter definition accurately describing its mode of operation as it works by filtering out masses whilst allowing a mass of interest to pass through the system to the detector. The QMS can be operated in three modes: Single Ion Monitoring (SIM), SCAN or SIM/SCAN. SIM is the most sensitive mode as it only allows ions of a specific mass to reach the detector (usually 1 atomic mass unit (amu) ±0.5 amu). The QMS can only transmit one mass (±0.5) at any one time so in order to capture a full mass spectrum (SCAN) the QMS must scan through a range of masses sequentially, with the result that sensitivity is reduced, as the time at which one mass is being observed (dwell time) others are being lost. A typical scan range is 35-500 m/z at 4 Hz. SIM/SCAN is a technique employed in modern QMS utilising fast electronics where a SCAN is performed between periods of SIM and is designed to offer some of the sensitivity enhancement of SIM whilst still providing a full mass spectrum.

Ignoring performance differences from different ionisation schemes, a QMS in SIM should theoretically achieve greater sensitivity than TOF instruments as they both employ similar detectors, with QMS delivering a constant stream of ions to the detector whilst a TOF has to release ions in bursts in order to record the time of flight. In a very complex sample which is not perfectly separated chromatographically, the extra mass resolution of some TOFs can give a better signal to noise ratio (S/N). The obvious benefit of a TOF is that a full mass spectrum is always being recorded.
2.3 Mass spectrometry

2.3.2 Electron Ionisation (EI)

Fragmentation of ions can be both desirable and undesirable. Keeping the ions in one piece allows easy identification using accurate mass whereas fragmentation is more useful in low resolution techniques as it can yield more unique ions. Electron Ionisation (EI) is most commonly used with QMS and utilises high energy electrons that usually cause multiple fragmentations of the parent ion into smaller ions. Different compounds will fragment differently and by keeping the electron energy constant (70 eV), analytes will fragment in the same way every time. This has allowed the compilation of fragmentation databases such as the National Institute of Standards and Technology (NIST) MS spectral database. Pure analytes’ fragmentation patterns are recorded and can be compared to unknown spectra in sample chromatograms to aid identification.

![Figure 2.1](image)

**Figure 2.1** – Schematic of an EI source showing the production of ions from the introduction of analytes orthogonally to the plane of the drawing represented by the central circle.

An EI source is very simple in its operation (figure 2.1). The analytes first enter an evacuated ionisation chamber where they are positively ionised by electrons ejected via thermal emission from a resistively heated rhenium filament following equation:

$$M + e^- \rightarrow M^+ + 2e^- \quad (2.7)$$

Perceiving electrons as a wave, energy transfer occurs when the wavelength is similar to the
bond length of the analyte. The ionisation energy of the molecule is often substantially less than the energy transferred with the resultant energy causing molecular fragmentation. The number of ions produced in a volume is linked to pressure (concentration of the analyte) and the electron current. The ions are then pushed orthogonally to the electron beam using a positively charged repeller plate. They are focussed by charged lenses and exit the source toward the quadrupole.

### 2.3.3 Chemical Ionisation Mass Spectrometry (CI-MS)

Chemical ionisation (CI) is referred to as a soft ionisation technique comparative to EI due to the reduced fragmentation of the parent ion. This is achieved using an ionisation reagent gas, such as methane, to transfer charge to the analyte without transferring the high energy of the electrons which cause fragmentation. A QMS can easily be adapted to utilise chemical ionisation by changing the inner ion source or in some instruments, a single ion source can be used for both techniques. Generally, CI ion sources have more enclosed inner source regions to contain the CI gas within the ionisation region. The high energy electrons produced from the filament collide with the CI gas which becomes ionised. It is these CI gas ions which then pass on their charge via proton transfer (not exclusive mechanism) resulting in protonated analyte molecules. CI is useful when it is desirable to maintain the parent ion intact but can have a reduced sensitivity up to one order of magnitude less than using EI due to the increased pressure in the source (Gross, 2011).

\[
CH_4 + e^- \rightarrow CH_4^+ + 2e^- \tag{2.8}
\]

A by-product of the collisions between high energy electrons and the CI gas is the production of numerous thermal (low kinetic energy) electrons. Thermal electrons are produced both from electrons which have lost their energy through collisions or from electrons ejected from an ionised CI reagent gas (equation 2.8). These electrons can be incorporated into the orbital of an electrophillic analyte to produce a negative ion. This is known as electron capture (EC) or negative chemical ionisation (NCI). Electron capture occurs for compounds with high electron affinity such as those with extensive electron de-localisation or containing electronegative elements or groups such as halogens, sulphurs or oxygen containing species such as nitrates.

A mass spectrometer is not required to exploit this mechanism and a dedicated Electron
Capture Detector (ECD), invented in 1960 by Lovelock (Lovelock and Lipsky, 1960), can be used, coupled to a GC. This detector allowed for the pioneering analysis of CFC’s in the atmosphere and essentially led to the discovery of their role in ozone depletion (Molina and Rowland, 1974). The advantage of NCI-MS over an ECD is that the former is mass selective and can resolve co-eluting GC peaks by filtering which mass reaches the detector using the quadrupole. NCI differs from standard chemical ionisation in numerous ways. Firstly, because an electron is being transferred and not a proton the mass of the analyte does not increase as per CI. All that is required to measure these negatively charged ions is to change the acceleration voltage polarity of the source repeller so that the ions transit the quadrupole toward the detector. Due to the high selectivity and resultant signal to noise ratio, electron capture is an extremely sensitive technique. Unlike CI, NCI often results in fragmentation of the parent ion. In fact, three mechanisms of ion formation exist (equations 2.9–2.11):

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{electron capture} & \quad M + e^- \rightarrow M^- \\
\text{dissociative electron capture} & \quad M + e^- \rightarrow [M-A]^- + A^- \\
\text{ion pair formation} & \quad M + e^- \rightarrow [M-B]^- + B^+ + e^-
\end{align*}
\]

NCI sensitivity is notoriously dependent upon ion source conditions and rapid sensitivity changes may occur over time due to low source operating temperatures, requiring a strict calibration and maintenance schedule (Oehme, 1994).

### 2.3.4 The Quadrupole Mass Filter

A quadrupole mass spectrometer consists of four parallel rods in electrical isolation. The rods are typically around 10 cm long in modern systems with the distance between two diagonally opposite poles \(1/1.148\) times the rod diameter, a ratio chosen to achieve a hyperbolic field between them. The quadrupole system is evacuated to allow ion transmission without collision. The entire system is heated to around 150–200°C to prevent molecules sticking to its surface. Opposite pairs of rods are connected to DC power supplies with opposite polarity. Each power supply is connected to an RF transformer which induces an alternating current in each pair of rods 180° out of phase between pairs. A specific combination of RF and DC voltages allows a stable ion trajectory of a specific mass through the quadrupole to the detector. Ions with too high an \(m/z\) collide with the poles and lose
Chapter 2: Instrumental Analysis of VSLH in Air and Water

their charge. Ions which are too low an m/z are thrown out of the quadrupole and do not reach the detector.

The regions of RF/DC combinations (stability regions) which allow successful passage of an ion through the system increase in size with increasing ion m/z (figure 2.2). This results in decreasing resolution at higher masses, a reason QMS is suitable for GC where small, volatile analytes are encountered, especially after fragmentation in an EI source. A non-linear relationship between RF and DC voltage is used to ‘tune’ the QMS in-order to achieve the greatest mass resolution.

![Diagram of RF and DC voltage relationships](image)

**Figure 2.2** – Depiction of the relationship between RF and DC voltages producing stable ion trajectory zones (area beneath curves). Solid and dotted lines represent linear and non-linear relationships, respectively. Reproduced from Pedder (2001).

The Agilent 5975 mass selective detectors used for the majority of this work employ true hyperbolic quadrupoles made from gold plated quartz (figure 2.3). The true hyperbolic shape allows for maximum mass resolution and transmission of stable ion trajectories whilst the quartz is inert and is not prone to thermal expansion when heated. The gold
coating provides electrical conductivity for application of the RF and DC voltages. The design is monolithic which prevents shifting of the pole alignment if the instrument is transported and experiences large shocks or vibration.

2.4 Thermal Desorption

Gas phase analysis should be simple using a GC, as the analyte needs to be in the gas phase for separation. In reality, concentrations of analytes in the gas phase are low and large volumes must be sampled. As described in section 2.2.1, sample introduction must occur in a narrow band in order to achieve efficient separation. If a capillary GC-MS system has a column flow rate of 1.5 mL min$^{-1}$, a 1.5 mL injection volume would have a minimum peak width of 1 min, which is very wide. In order to analyse large volumes of gas, pre-concentration is required. This is achieved using thermal desorption.

2.4.1 Thermal desorption overview

Thermal desorption is the process of pre-concentrating analytes from a volume of gas onto an adsorbent and subsequently desorbing them using a much smaller volume of carrier.
gas. The process is analogous to liquid or solid phase extraction of liquid samples, except in the gas phase. Analytes can be trapped from large quantities (litres) of gas, up to the breakthrough volume (the volume at which analytes begin to be displaced or removed by the sample media) of the trapping system being used.

Thermal desorption has evolved since its first use and in some cases has come full circle as GC technology has changed. The earliest form of thermal desorption is likely pyrolysis-GC which involves the heating of a sample to release gas-phase analytes. This could be classified as a slightly different technique as the analytes were not in the gas phase originally and the adsorbent material is destroyed during analysis. Some of the earliest forms of thermal desorption trapped gas phase analytes using liquid nitrogen (LN$_2$) to cryogenically pre-concentrate (McCleny et al., 1984). Due to the extremely low temperatures, the gases could be trapped on virtually any material such as glass or stainless steel but usually in the form of a narrow bore tube. This method of trapping is extremely effective, however numerous problems are associated with the use of LN$_2$ including blockage of the trap with ice, low breakthrough volumes, the inconvenience of large quantities of hazardous LN$_2$ and lack of portability.

In order to overcome problems associated with blockage of the cryo-trap and the lack of portability of these systems, adsorbent tube sampling is used (figure 2.4). This involves pre-concentration onto a physically large amount of sorbent packed into a metal or glass tube. The tubes are about 4 inches long and 1/4 inch diameter containing as much as 1 g of material. These tubes can then be taken outside of the laboratory and environmental samples taken in-situ. This is done either by diffusion (qualitative) or by pumping a known volume of gas through the tube (quantitative). The tubes can be thermally desorbed onto a GC directly but the volume of the tube results in poor chromatographic performance. A cyro-trap can be used to re-focus the analytes into a narrow band before GC separation. The tubes can be sampled quickly with high breakthrough volumes and stored for analysis at a later date. The tubes are used at ambient temperatures and can be flushed with carrier gas before desorption to minimise the quantity of water entering the cryo-trap.

Although refocusing using LN$_2$ is very effective it still carries the complication and expense of sourcing liquid cryogen. Cooled absorbent traps (cold-traps) were developed to remove the requirement for cryogen yet maintain the chromatographic performance of such a system. This is achieved by using a much smaller I.D. tube (generally quartz) packed with
2.4 Thermal Desorption

![Diagram of thermal desorption process]

Figure 2.4 – Adsorption of analytes onto tubes followed by desorption and cryogenic refocusing. Sample is drawn through an absorbent tube where analytes are trapped. The tube is heated (red bars) to desorb the analytes onto the GC column. Liquid nitrogen can be used to refocus the analytes before separation.

A small quantity of sorbent. The lower breakthrough volume of using less adsorbent is countered by cooling the cold-trap to sub-ambient temperatures depending on the nature of the analytes. The small quantity of sorbent in the cold trap is flash heated to allow rapid desorption onto the GC column and maintain chromatographic performance (figure 2.5). In addition to adsorbent tube samples being re-focused by the cold-trap, the large breakthrough volume allows for pre-concentration directly onto the cold-trap, known as ‘on-line sampling’. This enables the analysis of reactive species which can be lost over time on sorbent materials, low molecular weight species which are not fully retained on the un-cooled tubes and generally increases reproducibility of the analysis, a problem which hinders tube samples that have been stored for long periods or incorrectly sealed. A common use of on-line sampling is for the off-line analysis of gas cylinders filled with air known as ‘whole air samples’ (WAS, see chapter 4 section 4.1.1.2).
2.4.2 Cooled absorbents for online sampling

Due to the desire for removing the requirement of cryogens from the thermal desorption system, other methods of cooling the cold-trap are required. The most common being thermoelectric cooling, utilising the Peltier effect.

2.4.2.1 The Peltier effect

The Peltier cooler is a thermoelectric device named after the Peltier effect discovered by French physicist Jean Charles Athanase Peltier. The Peltier effect is the opposite of the Seebeck effect, where a potential difference is generated across the junction between two materials as they respond differently to temperature. The same principle is used in thermocouples to detect temperature. In the Peltier effect, an electric current is used to induce a temperature differential across the junction.

In practice, a Peltier cooler is made up of many junctions in series, mechanically bonded to two ceramic insulator plates (figure 2.6). This is known as a Peltier plate. When a current is applied to the plate, one side will cool and the opposite side will heat as energy is pumped across the junctions. The Peltier plate is not a cooler but rather a heat pump.
2.4 Thermal Desorption

![Diagram of a Peltier plate]

**Figure 2.6** – Schematic of a Peltier plate. n-type and p-type semiconductors have different electron densities and are connected in series.

To use a Peltier as an effective cooler, heat must be constantly removed from the hot side in-order that energy be absorbed by the cold side. This is usually done with an air or liquid cooled heat sink. The cooling power is provided by, and limited to, the heat exchange capacity of the heat sink with the Peltier plate usually providing focussed cooling to a small area. A common setup is to stack Peltiers in a pyramid with a larger plate removing the heat generated at the cold side of a smaller plate. This allows for a greater temperature differential across the stack ($\Delta T_{\text{max}}$) compared to a single plate. Stacks are easily powered in series with the larger plate dropping the voltage across the smaller plate. There is potentially no limit to the number of plates that can be used in a stack.

Typical Peltier plates are cheap ($\approx \£20$) and are quoted as having a $\Delta T_{\text{max}}$ of 70°C. This specified maximum is only valid with zero thermal load (nothing to cool) and drops to around 50°C in practise, resulting in minimum cooling temperatures of around -30°C with a 20°C heat sink. A Peltier is not very efficient as it produces a lot of heat simply via joule heating of the materials which increases with Peltier power. This extra heat must also be removed by the heat sink and eventually, increasing power to the Peltier will produce too much heat and the cold side will become warm. This limits their usefulness and often requires expensive power supplies to produce the low voltage and high current a Peltier requires. Both the Perkin Elmer and Markes thermal desorption units utilised in
this work used a Peltier stack and forced air heat sink to cool their adsorbent filled cold traps.

### 2.4.3 Adsorbent traps

A wide range of adsorbent materials are available for use with thermal desorption from graphitized carbon to porous polymers, each one has individual characteristics not always advantageous to an analysis. Some materials are better able to retain low molecular weight species, i.e. Carboxen 1000, but irreversibly bind larger compounds. Carbon based adsorbents can provide reaction surfaces where analytes are lost due to chemical degradation or modification. This is especially true for sulphur based compounds. Polymers such as Tenax TA offer stability for sulphur compounds but are not particularly strong adsorbents and are not hydrophobic. As air samples are complex mixtures of compounds with a wide range of boiling points, adsorbent material selection is vital.

![Figure 2.7](image-url) – Graphical representation of a multi-bed adsorbent trap and its operation.

A technique to allow the sampling of a wider range of analytes is the use of a multi-bed adsorbent trap (figure 2.7). By positioning weaker adsorbent materials toward the front of the trap and stronger ones further along the flow path, high molecular weight/boiling point analytes will be trapped on the weak adsorbent without being irreversibly trapped on the stronger material. Smaller, more volatile species that break-through the weaker adsorbent will be trapped by the subsequent one. When desorbed the flow is reversed. All of the thermal desorption units used during this research utilised multi-bed adsorbent traps with quartz wool, Carbotrap B and Carboxen 1000 as the weak, medium and strong...
adsorbents, respectively.

Due to the development of increasingly narrow-bore GC capillary columns <180 µm I.D., cooled adsorbent traps now display the same issues as direct desorption of adsorbent tubes onto columns >180 µm I.D. This is because the dead-volume inside the trap is too large for rapid transfer into the narrow column, which acts like a bottleneck. The characteristic sign for insufficient flow during desorption is the widening of peaks at the beginning of the chromatogram. As the GC program progresses, the peaks will become narrow again due to refocusing of the larger analytes on the column at the initial GC temperature. Splitting some of the flow from the trap to waste during desorption provides faster carrier gas flow rates through the trap and improves chromatographic resolution but impacts on sensitivity as a portion of sample is lost. The solution is either to reduce the trap volume, reducing capacity and thus breakthrough volume, or to re-focus the analytes at the head of the column which brings us full circle back to cryogens (figure 2.8).

![Diagram of cryogenically re-focussing analytes from a cooled absorbent trap](image)

**Figure 2.8** – Cryogenically re-focussing analytes from a cooled absorbent trap (blue bars) onto a narrow bore column for fast GC analysis.

There are now alternatives to achieve cryogenic or near-cryogenic temperatures without LN$_2$, such as the use of compressors. Compressors operate using the same principle as a household refrigerator and large compressors are how the LN$_2$ is originally manufactured. LN$_2$ compressors are physically large, expensive and require large amounts of power but smaller, thermo-acoustic and Stirling Cycle units are available (see section 2.4.3.1). These
lack the cooling capacity required to liquefy nitrogen but can cool the head of a GC column to cryogenic temperatures and re-focus analytes.

2.4.3.1 Free-Piston Stirling Cooler (FPSC)

A free piston stirling cooler (FPSC) moves heat from one surface (cold tip) to another (heat sink) via expansion and compression. Expanding helium at the cold side absorbs thermal energy from the environment. The helium is then displaced and compressed at the heat sink, where its temperature increases and is subsequently lost to the environment via the heat sink. It then returns to the cold side and expands, replacing the energy lost at the heat sink by absorbing heat from the cold tip. This process occurs rapidly, pumping thermal energy away from the cold tip and from whatever material with which the cold tip is in contact. The stroke of the piston is very short with the movement generated using a varying magnetic field, resulting in a very efficient system with very few mechanical heat losses. In fact, a FPSC can achieve greater than 90% efficiency. A FPSC can also be used as part of an effective water removal system called a ‘cold-finger’ dryer (section 2.4.4).
2.4.4 Water removal

Water removal from a gas stream prior to analysis is very important for both thermal desorption and GC-MS. Water entering a GC column can cause damage to non-bonded stationary phase and will destabilise retention times if different amounts of water are injected for different runs. Mass Spectrometers are sensitive to water as it can suppress ion formation, damage the filament and its rapid expansion in the ion source leads to reduced vacuum and more ion collisions, reducing the free path for analyte ions.

Thermal desorption systems usually concentrate sample on cooled traps and water will physically block the cooled capillary traps found in cryogenic TD systems. Absorbent traps run at ambient temperatures can be purged with dry helium to selectively remove water whilst maintaining sample integrity but very volatile analytes will be lost. For a dry helium purge to work efficiently the absorbent material to sample volume ratio must be high, resulting in very large traps with poor desorption characteristics (see section 2.4.1) or very small traps with very low sample breakthrough volumes (e.g. µDirac, Robinson et al. (2000)).

Water trapped on cooled absorbent traps will expand to 1400 times its liquid volume upon heating causing a huge pressure increase and very poor desorption as the volume of gas trying to enter the narrow GC column will be very large. Often in these situations the pressure causes back-flushing of the system which can lead to contamination of the instrument upstream of the trap.

There are many techniques for water removal from a gas stream but none offer a complete solution for all analytical scenarios. Magnesium perchlorate is often used as a direct water absorbent with the air sample passing through a container filled with the powder. As a strong oxidising agent, Mg(ClO$_4$)$_2$ has health implications and has also been shown to remove some analytes from the sample stream (Doskey, 1991).

A highly effective water removal technique is the use of a Nafion membrane (figure 2.10). Nafion is a DuPont trade name for a sulfonated tetrafluoroethylene (C$_7$HF$_{13}$O$_5$S·C$_2$F$_4$) similar to PTFE. Nafion allows water to selectively pass through the membrane, removing it from the sample stream. The water partitions into the polymer very quickly and is removed from the other side of the membrane by an absorbent or a dry counter flow.
of gas. Nafion is not perfect as oxygenated and sulphur species can pass through the membrane and are lost from the sample. Halocarbon species are completely retained and do not transition into the membrane. Nafion can also be used to separate gases to remove interferences or as a membrane separating two phases, such as removing analytes from a water supply into a gas sample stream.

Oxygenated and sulphur containing analytes can be measured in humid gas samples using a ‘coldfinger’ drier (unpublished work at the University of York). This involves trapping the water in the sample stream as ice in a cooled glass tube. This technique maintains most analytes without losses if carried out properly. Coldfinger water removal was not tested for halocarbons prior to this work as Nafion was satisfactory and it was assumed that they would dissolve in water and be trapped in the ice. In fact, halocarbon containing samples can be dried using a coldfinger and thus methods incorporating the analysis of a wider suite of analytes can be used (figure 2.11).

In order to maintain sample integrity using a cold finger, the water in the sample must transition between the gas and solid phases very quickly. If liquid water is present in the system, losses may occur. The system appears to work at an optimum when some ice crystals are already present in the glass tube. This allows water to be removed by the growth of these crystals rather than condensation. The gas entering the coldfinger is kept hot and is cooled to <-20°C as rapidly as possible.

A coldfinger can dry an air sample to a lower dew point than a Nafion, which is limited by flow rates and the dew point of the counter current drying gas. The downside to using a coldfinger is its size and the requirement for trapped ice to be removed regularly which
Figure 2.11 – Top: Recovery tests of replicate VSLS analyses through a coldfinger drier at -30°C. The maximum peak area is scaled to 100%. Bottom: ratio to CCl₄ to take into account instrument response changes.
Chapter 2: Instrumental Analysis of VSLH in Air and Water

is currently a manual process.

2.4.4.1 FPSC coldfinger

The cold finger water removal technique usually employs an ethylene glycol chiller bath to cool the glass tube to around -30°C. These chillers are large, heavy, expensive and the ethylene glycol can spill. All of these problems lead to a reduction in their usefulness on-board moving research platforms such as ships or aircraft.

![Figure 2.12 – CAD drawing of FPSC coldfinger design shown without covers and as a cross-section with one glass tube insert. Brown coloured block is expanded polyurethane insulation. Glass ‘coldfinger’ traps are housed within an aluminium block which is cooled by contact with the FPSC cold-head. The sample stream passes through the glass tube where the water is removed to a dew point determined by a set point temperature (-20 to -80°C).](image)

A new design of coldfinger was created to address these problems using a FPSC unit (section 2.4.3.1). The FPSC was used to cool an aluminium block insulated with closed-cell expanded polyurethane foam into which the glass tube was inserted. The unit uses
significantly less power (100 W vs. 1500 W), can cool to lower temperatures (-80°C vs. -30°C), weighs around 1/4 of the weight and costs 1/3rd of the price of an ethylene glycol chiller and has no liquid to spill.

2.5 Analysis of VSLH using TD-GC-MS

VSLH species studied during this project were all measured using GC-MS with sample pre-concentration via thermal desorption. GC columns with 3 different phases and many different dimensions were used throughout this project due to the requirements of different analysis and the purchase of newer instrumentation.

2.5.1 Perkin Elmer system

During early work a Perkin Elmer AutosystemXL GC-MS was used in conjunction with a Perkin Elmer TurboMatrix300 thermal desorption unit. The Perkin Elmer TD was equipped with the on-line air sampling accessory. This allowed for gas phase samples to be introduced directly onto the Peltier cooled absorbent trap. When the TD was not collecting sample, during desorption for example, the flow continues through the system. This is useful with regard to pre-purging the lines prior to sampling but care must be taken when using expensive gas standards as a lot of sample can be wasted if the cylinder is not turned off.

This system was robust but had limitations with regard to sample throughput due to long sampling and analysis times (figure 2.13). The TD unit used a peltier cooled, multibed adsorbent cold trap with an I.D. of 3 mm. This resulted in slow desorption onto the GC column and a large baseline fluctuation due to thermal expansion in the large volume of the trap. The slow desorption resulted in poor chromatography at the beginning of the chromatogram (see section 2.4.3). The manufacturer employed a permanent ‘split’ during the desorption of the trap where a portion of the desorbed sample is diverted and does not enter the GC column. This helps to achieve faster flow rates through the trap during desorption but ultimately reduces sensitivity due to reduction in sample quantity. Even with this split in place the chromatography was limited and a wide-bore, thick film PLOT (Porous Layer Open Tubular) column was used to retain analytes long enough for
the baseline to settle and even re-focus the analytes on the column at a low initial oven temperature. 3 L of sample was required to achieve usable sensitivity and as sample flow rate was restricted to 100 mL min$^{-1}$ this resulted in a long sampling time of 30 min.

### 2.5.2 Markes Unity2– Agilent GC-MS

The instruments were upgraded to Markes thermal desorption systems (Unity2 and CIA8) coupled to Agilent GC-MS (6850/7890-5975C) in July 2010. The Markes TD unit offered significant improvements over the Perkin Elmer system. Most importantly was its smaller cold trap volume which was 2 mm in the packed section. The reduction in absorbent resulted in much better chromatography even when operating completely split-less. Breakthrough volumes (the volume a trap can quantitatively retain) were not reached until over 3 L but as the entire sample entered the GC and the new MS was more sensitive, 1 L of sample was sufficient, reducing sampling time to 10 min. The faster desorption negated the use of a PLOT column to refocus the analytes and allowed faster analysis times (figure 2.14).

It was later discovered that due to the Unity2 utilising the GC’s electronic pressure control unit (EPC) from a split/split-less inlet, the septum purge acts as a small split at the head of the column resulting in faster flow during desorption. The septum purge is fixed at 3 mL min$^{-1}$ on Agilent 6890 and 6850 GCs but can be switched off on 7890 or later models.
2.5 Analysis of VSLH using TD-GC-MS

2.5.2.1 VSLH using Negative Chemical Ionisation (NCI)

Atmospheric concentrations of VSLH can be extremely low (sub-ppt), especially in un-productive regions such as the open ocean gyres (Jones et al., 2010; Chuck et al., 2005). Species with very short lifetimes of minutes to hours such as CH₂ICl or CH₂I₂ have a rapidly decreasing vertical profile with increasing altitude in the atmosphere. Their concentration at the surface is often usually <1 ppt and at altitude they are below the LOD of TD-GC-MS systems running in EI mode (Andrews et al., 2013). NCI was tested using methane as a chemical ionisation gas (CI gas). For the VSLH, negative ions 35, 37; 79, 81 and 127 were monitored corresponding to the stable isotopes of chlorine, bromine...
and iodine, respectively. Negative ions are formed via electron capture and upon receipt of an electron, the easiest route to a lower energy is to fragment into a negatively charged halogen and a neutral molecule. In the case of polyhalogenated species the molecule will exist in its lowest energy state with the greatest interatomic distance between the carbon and the largest halogen with the most electrons, leading to cleavage of the weakest (longest) \( C-X \) bond in the order iodine–bromine–chlorine. For example NCI of \( \text{CHBrCl}_2 \) will result in fragmentation via electron capture with preferential cleavage of the \( C-Br \) bond to form \( Br^- \) and \( [\text{CHCl}_2]^+ \). Preferential cleavage is stated as loss of a chlorine ion is also possible but not favoured. Chromatographic resolution is important in NCI (and thus also for ECD) as often there are issues resolving \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) from \( \text{CHBrCl}_2 \) as they elute at a similar time on many columns and the low abundance of the negative ion 35 for chlorine hinders using individual masses for separation, as possible in EI. Larger molecules such as halogenated aromatics are more likely to form molecular negative ions as they can de-localise the electron around the ring structure (Buser, 1986).

![Figure 2.15](image_url)  

**Figure 2.15** – Analysis of a gas standard containing mixed VSLH ranging between 0.4–2.7 ppt using NCI, methane as the CI gas and a Restek RTX502.2, 0.18 mm I.D., 1 micron film column, 20 m in length. Peak I.D. numbers correspond to species in table 2.1.

For aircraft measurements the use of NCI is desirable due to the lower LODs attainable. NCI is much more sensitive than using EI but is less robust and requires the use of a CI gas, typically methane. Methane is a product of the natural gas industry and very high purity methane is difficult to produce making it expensive and likely to contain contaminants. The latter, combined with lower source temperatures and the lower vacuum due to the introduction of such high flows into the MS chamber results in rapid oxidation of the ion.
Table 2.1 – Limits of detection for the Unity2–Agilent GC-MS system using EI and NCI sources. LOD defined as 3 x S/N, LOQ is 5 x S/N and Qion is the mass of the ion used for quantification. PA is integrated GC peak area.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Label</th>
<th>Conc. in standard (ppt)</th>
<th>NCI PA in 1 L (pptv)</th>
<th>NCI Qion</th>
<th>NCI S/N</th>
<th>NCI LOD (pptv)</th>
<th>NCI LOQ (pptv)</th>
<th>EI PA in 1 L (pptv)</th>
<th>EI Qion</th>
<th>EI S/N</th>
<th>EI LOD (pptv)</th>
<th>EI LOQ (pptv)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Cl</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>575.4</td>
<td>8585089</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>624</td>
<td>2.766</td>
<td>4.611</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Br</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>14.8</td>
<td>2688585</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>669</td>
<td>0.066</td>
<td>0.111</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Cl₂</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>34.5</td>
<td>40735083</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>3477</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₄I</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>4785880</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>1829</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>80460</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>393.6</td>
<td>0.029</td>
<td>0.048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrCl</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>277248</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>1085</td>
<td>0.016</td>
<td>0.027</td>
<td>44662</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>198</td>
<td>0.088</td>
<td>0.146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl₃</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8.4</td>
<td>540318</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>499</td>
<td>0.051</td>
<td>0.084</td>
<td>123006</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>362</td>
<td>0.070</td>
<td>0.116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl₄</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>86.8</td>
<td>20340929</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>21913</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td>0.020</td>
<td>1375825</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>2148</td>
<td>0.121</td>
<td>0.202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Br₂</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>751732</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>7162</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>28649</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>231</td>
<td>0.034</td>
<td>0.056</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl₂</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>651481</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>5808</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>33088</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>122</td>
<td>0.054</td>
<td>0.090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1587356</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>1479</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>18517</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>0.021</td>
<td>0.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₂Cl</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>936946</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>14573</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>51480</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>340</td>
<td>0.033</td>
<td>0.054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂IBr</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>1087920</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>734</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.010</td>
<td>13836</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>0.036</td>
<td>0.059</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₃</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>1041424</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>16950</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>94848</td>
<td>173</td>
<td>751</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.036</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂I₂</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>89694</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>227</td>
<td>0.011</td>
<td>0.018</td>
<td>21828</td>
<td>268</td>
<td>170</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
source known as ion burn. The rapid downward drift of NCI-QMS was also documented by Worton et al. (2008) who observed a loss in sensitivity >60% over 6 days of continuous ambient air sampling. Because QMS sources use relatively low voltages to accelerate ions out of the source, ion burn negatively affects sensitivity. The other major disadvantage of methane is that it is a flammable gas and its use on-board aircraft is very difficult as it will always be in close proximity to an oxygen cylinder (used for NO\textsubscript{x} instrumentation).

For these reasons an alternative reagent gas was investigated. An NCI gas produces thermal electrons by absorbing the kinetic energy from the electrons ejected from the filament and releasing secondary electrons post collision with the high energy electrons. Even if the NCI gas does not release secondary electrons it will still convert enough high energy electrons to thermal electrons for electron capture to take place in the ion source. Thus, a NCI gas just needs to be inert.

Argon can be used as an ionisation gas for PCI and NCI and is useful for the production of ions without forming adducts due to its inertness. It is also widely used as a collision gas for collision induced dissociation (CID) and as a shielding/ionisation gas for inductively coupled plasma-MS (ICP-MS). Argon has an ionisation efficiency energy of 15.76 eV which is greater than methane (12.61 eV). However, argon can be produced very cleanly and is very inert which may help to lengthen the inner source cleaning schedule and reduce background contamination. Most importantly, Argon can easily be certified for aircraft use due to its inertness.

A difficulty encountered testing argon as an NCI gas was that in NCI the reagent ions cannot be seen, therefore it is difficult to determine the amount of Ar entering the MSD. The mass flow controller (MFC) used in the Agilent 5975C is calibrated for 0-10 mL min\(^{-1}\) of methane and whilst it can control the Ar flow, it requires re-calibration for the actual flow rate to be known. This can be done using a Gillibrator (Sensidyne) but would require removing the gasket sealed VCR fittings on the ionisation gas inlet and rebuilding with new gaskets after testing. The high vacuum gauge can be used to estimate the amount of Ar in the MSD by monitoring the pressure and comparing with the use of methane. Ar does produce ions in PCI and the mass spec itself can be used to measure the amount entering the system.
2.5.2.2 MSD source modification

In an effort to prolong instrument sensitivity the MSD source and operating conditions were modified. Firstly the source and quadrupole were ran at higher than standard operating temperatures of 200°C for the quadrupole (150°C standard) and 250°C for the source body (230°C standard). Secondly, the ion drawout plate inside the inner source was modified to increase the hole from 3 mm to 6 mm diameter. The drawout plate encloses the ionisation chamber where ions are formed using high energy electrons. The charged ions are accelerated out of the chamber through the drawput plate by the repeller. A larger drawout plate hole allows for the removal of column eluent from the inner source by the vacuum which includes the removal of water entering the MSD. A larger drawout plate may reduce ionisation efficiency as some of analytes are removed before being ionised but should reduce ion suppression by water and help to prolong the cleanliness of the inner source.

Chemical ionisation sources differ to an EI source as the ionisation chamber is more enclosed. This allows the CI gas to remain in the inner source for longer as interaction with analytes is required for proton transfer. Enclosing the ionisation chamber is achieved by fitting an interface tip to seal the MS transfer line into the inner source, removal of one of the filaments and by using a drawout plate with a very small opening. Because the ionisation chamber is so enclosed, any water entering the MS resides inside the source for much longer. Higher performance turbo pumps are used for CI in order to deal with the removal of excess CI reagent gas but the expansion of water inside the inner source leads to fluctuations in pressure which, due to the enclosed design, cannot be rapidly dealt with by the vacuum system.

This source design, the use of a hydrocarbon ionisation gas and the increased pressure inside the vacuum chamber results in CI sensitivity being highly variable and source cleaning is required on a shorter time frequency.

2.5.2.3 GC-MS for fieldwork application

GC-MS systems are not designed to be moved around. Portable instruments are available but often lack the performance of lab based equipment (Eckenrode, 2001). Problems trans-
porting systems include, but not limited to: Damage during transportation, contamination and increased wear on gas fittings not designed for multiple connections/disconnections.

![Diagram of TD-GC-MS system in a flight case]

**Figure 2.16** – TD-GC-MS system in a custom built, ruggedised flight case.

In an effort to make the transportation of a TD-GC-MS system more simple, the system was built into a flight case (Jetlife) so that it could be transported as one unit. The case was built on four heavy duty castors and incorporated an internal rail system (Rexforth Bosch) which added support to the flight case. The TD and GC-MS were mounted to separate 5 mm thick aluminium plates and mounted to the rail with rubber shock mounts. The TD weighs 22 kg and the GC-MS 67 kg. To support this weight many shock mounts would be required but this would make the mounting very rigid. In order to maintain lateral flex in the shock mounts, medium density foam was placed between the instruments and the flight case base. This spreads and supports the weight of the system allowing for the use of softer shock mounts to deal with lateral movement and absorb impacts during transport and deployment. The system could then be left partially connected, decreasing mobilisation time.

The major disadvantage to mounting and transporting the system in this manner is the size and weight of the combined system. The system has been used on multiple research vessels and is often slightly too large for some of the ship doors. In total the system weighs...

78
Figure 2.17 – Field portable TD-GC-MS system mounted in flight case. AutoP&T system (section 2.6.2) mounted on top.
around 150 kg and requires 4 people to safely lift. Reducing the size and weight by 50% is easily achievable by stripping away unnecessary parts and minimising the weight of others. This would progress a useful but cumbersome system into a truly portable solution.

### 2.5.3 Data processing

Processing of chromatographic data is often overlooked as a research subject compared to physical instrument design but is of utmost importance. Without reproducible integration of GC peaks the instrument reproducibility is lost. Often, instrument manufacturers produce software designed to meet the requirements of a wide demographic with a focus on pharmaceutical and as such are unsuitable for the requirements of atmospheric monitoring. Previous instrumentation relied on manual integration, which can be biased and required many hours of labour that could result in errors being made.

![Figure 2.18 – GCWerks program modified to accept Agilent Chemstation data files. Blue, red and black crosses represent the peak area of CHBr\(_3\) for air samples, calibrations and blanks respectively plotted along a time series. Light blue cross shows currently selected peak which is displayed in the window below.](image)

GCWerks is a program designed especially for the AGAGE network of MEDUSA instruments (Miller et al. (2008)). It runs on Linux and controls the running and data analysis of
2.6 Analysis of VSLH in water

An automated purge and trap unit was developed for the analysis of VSLH in seawater. This allows for the measurement of trace gases, not limited to VLSH, in any liquid sample but was designed predominantly for operation on-board research ships sampling seawater from pumped underway supplies and discrete samples taken directly from the ocean.

2.6.1 Water analysis

The accurate determination of volatile organic compounds (VOCs) in water is of significant importance both environmentally and with regard to human health. Drinking water contaminants such as trihalomethanes (THMs), aromatic hydrocarbons, pesticides and waste pharmaceuticals must be closely monitored and have legally enforceable limits. Biogenic VOCs created in-situ or absorbed into water from the atmosphere also play an important role in the environment.

VOC mixtures in water are often separated using gas chromatography (GC) and identified and quantified using mass spectroscopy (MS), however the sources of error for the direct
Chapter 2: Instrumental Analysis of VSLH in Air and Water

GC-MS analysis of seawater are inherently high. Water is an extremely difficult solvent for GC-MS analysis causing problems such as injection issues, damage to GC capillary columns and decreasing detector sensitivity. Accurate determination of VOCs in water at trace levels usually requires pre-concentration of the sample in order to achieve the desired analytical sensitivity.

Purge and trap in conjunction with thermal desorption is used as an alternative to direct liquid injection as much less water enters the GC system and large volumes of water can be purged to pre-concentrate the sample prior to analysis. Purge and trap techniques often require extensive sample preparation which can make continuous sampling difficult, especially when taking measurements in the field. Automating the sample collection and analysis procedure significantly reduces sources of error and allows continuous sampling 24 hours per day.

2.6.2 Purge and Trap

To analyse volatile organic compounds (VOCs) in water samples, the VOCs are removed from the solvent by heating and degassing with nitrogen. The VOCs are stripped from the water into the gas phase and are subsequently trapped on a cooled absorbent bed prior to thermal desorption onto a gas chromatograph. As per the method used by Jones et al. (2009), water is collected as a discrete sample, filtered and transferred into a glass purge tube (figure 2.19).

A 0.45 micron PTFE filter is used to remove phytoplankton and other biological species from the water. This type of filter has a maximum pore diameter of 0.45 micron, capturing any phytoplankton (larger than 0.45 micron (Le Bouteiller et al., 1992)) and also retaining smaller species such as picoplankton in its smaller pores. The purge tube is heated to 50°C and purged with n6 grade nitrogen or catalytically scrubbed air at 50 mL min⁻¹ for 20 min, which enters through a quartz frit (porosity 3).

The VOC enriched nitrogen exiting the purge tube has a high water content which is reduced using water removal techniques which vary depending on the properties of the species being analysed. For organic halogen compounds, saturated aromatic/aliphatic hydrocarbons and sulphur compounds a ME™-series Nafion® moisture exchanger and a counterflow MD™-series Nafion® gas drier (Permapure™) can be used in series. Water
is able to permeate the Nafion® membrane whilst the analytes are retained. For Oxygenated VOCs and unsaturated hydrocarbons such as monoterpenes the water is crystallised out in a cold finger- a glass tube cooled to -30°C. The VOC enriched nitrogen then passes through an absorbent trap held at -30°C (Markes Unity2) where the VOCs pre-concentrate before being thermally desorbed (300°C) onto the GC column.

**Figure 2.19** – Design of glass purge tube to optimise gas-liquid contact time. Labels A, B and C mark the water inlet, N₂ inlet and quartz frit, respectively.

The glass purge tube was designed to maximize the purge efficiency. A highly sensitive instrument, in theory, would allow the use of less sample volume. This introduces less moisture into the instrument. Further, a smaller water volume means less gas to purge from the sample and hence faster purge times, although this relationship is not linear.

The out-gassing of analytes from the sample is dependent upon partitioning between the
liquid and gas phase. The dissolved gases in the sample partition between phases across the interface surrounding each bubble of nitrogen that passes through the liquid. Assuming that the purge gas is never saturated, the rate of gas removal from the sample is dependent upon four factors: the total surface area of all the nitrogen bubbles that pass through the sample, the temperature of the sample, the time in which the gas contacts the sample and the Henry’s law constant of the analyte. Therefore, in order to achieve the most efficient de-gassing of a sample the bubbles must spend as long as possible in contact with the sample. By reducing the volume of the sample the residence time of each bubble is decreased also.

Bubble hydrodynamics also highlights a number of other parameters which are relevant to this system: Bubbles must be small and numerous to ensure maximum surface area. Bubbles reach terminal velocity shortly after formation (< 0.1 seconds) (Leifer et al., 2000) This terminal velocity is determined by a combination of the bubble's drag and its buoyancy.

Whereas buoyancy is relative to the gas which forms the bubble, drag is dependent upon bubble size and viscosity of the water. For bubbles with radius \((r) < 700 \text{ micron}\), rise time is dependent on viscosity of the liquid due to drag. Increasing bubble size increases velocity as the bubble is more buoyant. Increasing temperature increases velocity as the liquid is less viscous. Bubbles with \(r > 700 \text{ micron}\) will begin to oscillate in trajectory. This increases the bubbles rise time and eventually \((r \approx 2000 \text{ micron}, T = 20^\circ\text{C})\) the rise time becomes independent of bubble size.

Increasing temperature causes greater oscillation so, for large bubbles, rise time will be increased as a function of temperature. For bubbles larger than 2 mm, rise time is independent of temperature (Leifer et al., 2000). Bubble size generated in this system is dependent upon the porosity of the quartz frit and can be kept constant. However, due to its effect upon the VOC vapour pressure, the bubble trajectory and the viscosity of the water, it is clear that accurate temperature control is vital if de-gassing is to be reproducible.

### 2.6.3 Manual Purge and Trap

Manual water sampling is still commonly used for purge and trap systems. If performed correctly, the technique is able to quantify volatile species in water with sufficient accuracy
2.6 Analysis of VSLH in water and precision to visualize trends and provide useful data for oceanic and atmospheric models. However, as with all manual sampling methods, human error can influence the data significantly.

Automation of a method removes sources of human error, discussed in depth in the next section. Just as important and often overlooked is the reduction in workload that automation can bring. This is particularly crucial on-board research vessels, where sea-sickness and the fact that often only one scientist operates an instrument places a significant pressure on the analyst’s time. It also allows more time for the analyst to concentrate on the upkeep of the instrument and the interpretation of the data.

![Figure 2.20 – Schematic of the AutoP&T system coupled to a Markes Unity2 CIA8 thermal desorption system and Turner Chlorophyll-a fluorimeter.](image)

### 2.6.4 Automation of the system

The automated purge and trap is built around the glass purge tube design (figure 2.19) without modification of the interactive system between the purge gas and the seawater. The purge and trap automation is achieved very simply by the addition of a peristaltic pump (Watson Marlow, 1208/DV), four three-way PTFE diaphragm solenoid valves (A1,
A2, B and C) (BioChemValve) and a programmable micro-controller (Arduino Uno). The software for Arduino is open source and the code used for the automated purge and trap is available in the appendix (section A.2).

The four solenoid valves allow for a multitude of flow paths through the system (figure 2.22), letting the user fill/empty the purge tube, de-gas the water to waste, de-gas the water and trap the gases for analysis or to purge the tube with nitrogen to clean it.

![Figure 2.21 - Valve flow diagram showing the four water flow paths through the three main valves and filter during one operation of the system.](image)

The system can work in one of two modes, inline and offline, as outlined below.

### 2.6.4.1 Inline analysis

Designed to sample from the clean water supply of a research vessel, a water stream is pumped into the system continuously. At all times during the instruments operation, except whilst filling the tube, the water passes through the system and out to waste which maintains a supply of fresh water to the instrument. The flow is set at 30 mL min\(^{-1}\) through 1/8" PFA tubing (Swagelok) which maintains a low dead volume. This ensures that when the instrument takes a sample, that sample is representative of the seawater at the vessels present geographical location at that specific date and time. This allows easy
Figure 2.22 – Circuit diagram for automated control of the purge and trap system.

comparison with other measurements taken simultaneously and with remote sensing data. The system was designed to work alongside a commercial thermal desorption unit; Markes Unity2 and CIA8 air server accessory. The CIA8 is simply 8 heated valves used to select a sample gas stream. The system could easily be modified to work with any commercial or custom thermal desorption technique.

The timings of the system during each sample are outlined in figure 2.23. To take a sample the instrument is triggered by the opening of the valve on the CIA8 air server to which the instruments sample outlet is connected. A pre-set pre-purge time on both the AutoP&T and the CIA8 allows gas flow through the glass purge tube and through the lines of the CIA8 and Unity2 and out of the mass flow controller to waste. During the last twenty seconds of this purge time, the seawater entering the system is diverted through a 0.45 micron PTFE filter to remove bubbles and pre-purge the filter before the tube is filled (figure 2.22). This is only done twenty seconds prior to analysis to help preserve the life of the filter. Once the purge time is over, the nitrogen flow is diverted into the cold trap and seawater is pumped into the purge tube at a constant rate for a pre-set time. The tube is thermostatic at the set point temperature and extra power is given to the heating coil during filling to counteract the cooling effect of the seawater. Once the tube is filled the
water is thermostatic again within 10 seconds. The water is purged with nitrogen for the
duration of the trapping time. Once the sampling is finished and all the volatile gases have
been stripped from the water, the valve on the CIA8 closes and nitrogen flow through the
system ceases. The water is then emptied from the tube by utilising the nitrogen pressure
within the tube to expel the water to waste.

**Figure 2.23** – Timing diagram for Auto-P&T operation. Red bars represent
actuation of valves. The blue, purple and green shaded areas relate to Thermal
Desorption, AutoP&T and GC-MS operations, respectively.

### 2.6.4.2 Offline analysis

In addition to constant, automated sampling from a sample stream, the system can be used
for analysing discrete samples taken manually; such as depth profiles from Niskin bottles
on a CTD. This can be achieved by simply switching the flow so that the peristaltic pump
draws the sample from the container in which the water was collected just before the flow
is diverted to fill the purge tube. This maximises the sample frequency as the instrument
will start to sample as soon as the Unity2 is ready. In manual sampling, if the timing is
incorrectly judged a sample can be missed.

The other option is to manually trigger each sample. The manual sample inlet line is
placed in a sample bottle and a button is pressed on the front of the instrument. It then
transfers a set amount of sample into the purge tube and stops once the analysis is finished.
In both options air is never allowed to enter the system as air bubbles can be trapped in
the valves and effect the sample volume and the analysis results.
The purge tube can be cleaned with gas and/or liquid. In constant use it is not necessary to clean the purge tube as the previous sample was stripped of >90% of the volatile gases (figure 2.25) and <1% of the previous sample will remain in the tube; therefore carryover of volatile compounds will be negligible. If cleaning is required the tube can be purged with pure nitrogen by opening SV-C. For liquid cleaning; the tube can be filled using the manual sample line to introduce the liquid which can be heated, purged/not purged with nitrogen and subsequently emptied to waste automatically.

The automated purge and trap aims to reduce the error associated with manual purge and trap techniques. This error can be significantly large and although the de-gassing of liquid samples is unlikely to ever be described as a highly accurate technique, there are numerous improvements that can be made to improve the precision, which is important if environmental trends are to be observed.

Without changing the construction of the glass purge tube there are three main improvements that can be made over manual purge and trap at previous/subsequent stages during the analysis. Firstly, the quantity of water introduced into the system can be measured more accurately and delivered more precisely. Percentage error in sample volume is directly proportional to measurement percentage error. Inconsistencies in sample volume can be large due to human error associated with manual operation of a glass syringe. Increasing the sample volume will decrease the percentage error and also increase sensitivity. However, a greater volume will require longer purge times, longer temperature equilibration and introduce more water vapour into a water sensitive instrument. The use of a peristaltic pump which delivers a constant flow rate allows the introduction of a consistent volume of sample.

The second stage of the improvement process involves the heating and degassing of the sample. Previously the glass purge tube has been wrapped in a resistively heated rubber cable to which power is applied until the temperature equilibrates at 50°C. Due to the low power required to maintain a well-insulated tube at any given temperature the initial heating time is substantial. For this same reason, when the cold-water sample is introduced into the tube, it takes a long time for the water to equilibrate to the desired temperature, as the power delivered to the system remains constant.

The automated system works using a high-powered resistive heater in a thermally sta-
ble fabric weave with feedback of the temperature to the micro-controller. The micro-
controller decides the amount of power to give the tube via a PID algorithm which looks
at the difference between the actual temperature and the set-point. Temperature is con-
trolled using pulse width modulation of the power input. Equilibrium is achieved to within
± 0.1 degrees using short pulses of high power. The reserve of power is then utilised when
the cold water enters the tube, the temperature difference increases and the high power is
delivered for a longer percentage of the time allowing the sample to be heated rapidly to
the desired set-point. The water acts as a thermal buffer so that the set-point is reached
without overshoot. The temperature feedback loop keeps the sample thermostatic regard-
less of ambient temperature changes. Alarm temperatures are pre-allocated to prevent
thermal runaway if, for example, the temperature sensor fails, becomes separated from
the heating coil or is not plugged in. The added control over the temperature of the sam-
ple should improve precision due to a more consistent removal of volatile organics from
the water.

The third stage of the process is the timing of each stage of the analysis. As all timings are
controlled by the micro-controller, samples are purged for equal time and always undergo
the same residence time within the instrument.

2.6.5 Experimental results

The automated purge and trap can be used for sampling water from any source but was
designed for continuous underway sampling of seawater aboard research ships and thus
the performance tests carried out reflect this requirement. Due to the high sensitivity
of the instrument and the high concentration of trihalomethanes and other halocarbons
in domestic water supplies, bottled mineral water was used to test the system in the
lab. Mineral water contains greater concentrations than seawater for all of the measured
halocarbons and was used for reproducibility and purge efficiency tests. These tests were
then repeated using seawater samples during the TORERO field campaign (see chapter
5). Chromatograms with very clean baselines and quantification of 24 analytes in real
seawater samples was achieved (figure 2.24). Hydrocarbons and monoterpenes analysis
shown here was developed for the AMT22 cruise which is not covered in this PhD.
Figure 2.24 – Extracted ion chromatogram for seawater analysed using the automated purge and trap system. Peak numbers correspond to table 2.2.
Table 2.2 – Automated purge and trap compound list with typical purge efficiencies and reproducibility

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Label</th>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Molecular formula</th>
<th>Purge efficiency</th>
<th>Reproducibility %RSD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Isoprene</td>
<td>C_5H_8</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>DMS</td>
<td>C_2H_6S</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Methyl iodide</td>
<td>CH_3I</td>
<td>&gt; 90</td>
<td>2.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Bromochloromethane</td>
<td>CH_2BrCl</td>
<td>&gt; 95</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Chloroform</td>
<td>CHCl_3</td>
<td>&gt; 95</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Benzene</td>
<td>C_6H_6</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Carbon Tetrachloride</td>
<td>CCl_4</td>
<td>&gt; 99</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Dibromomethane</td>
<td>CH_2Br_2</td>
<td>&gt; 99</td>
<td>6.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Bromodichloromethane</td>
<td>CHBrCl_2</td>
<td>&gt; 99</td>
<td>12.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Chloroiodomethane</td>
<td>CH_2ClI</td>
<td>&gt; 99</td>
<td>6.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Toluene</td>
<td>C_7H_8</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Dibromochloromethane</td>
<td>CHBr_2Cl</td>
<td>&gt; 98</td>
<td>9.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Bromoiodomethane</td>
<td>CH_2BrI</td>
<td>&gt; 99</td>
<td>0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ethyl Benzene</td>
<td>C_8H_10</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>m/p-xylene</td>
<td>C_8H_10</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>α-xylene</td>
<td>C_9H_10</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Bromoform</td>
<td>CHBr_3</td>
<td>&gt; 95</td>
<td>5.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>α-pinene</td>
<td>C_10H_16</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Diiodomethane</td>
<td>CH_2I_2</td>
<td>&gt; 80</td>
<td>3.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>β-pinene</td>
<td>C_10H_16</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2.6 Analysis of VSLH in water

2.6.5.1 Purge efficiency

The volume of water sample used for analysis was 20 mL, chosen to allow adequate GC peak areas below the concentrations normally observed in seawater. A larger sample would give greater sensitivity but would require longer purge times and introduce more water vapour into the system. The purge time for 20 mL of water was then evaluated by purging one sample of Evian mineral water for 10 minute intervals (figure 2.26). It can be seen that the majority of the analytes are removed from the water within the first 10 minutes but it is necessary to purge for 20 minutes in order to remove some of the ‘stickier’ species such as CH$_2$I$_2$.

Reproducibility and carry-over were evaluated by analysing multiple samples from a single bottle of Evian with nitrogen blanks between each sample (figure 2.25). The water was taken from the bottle without letting in any air, eliminating head space to reduce out-gassing between samples. Some carry-over existed after a water sample but concentrations measured in mineral water are much greater than found in seawater samples. Blank runs eliminate this problem but a second revision of the system introduced a cleaning step to flush the tube with nitrogen after each sample (using valve C, figure 2.20) without the reduction in sample throughput that blank runs would necessitate.

2.6.5.2 Results and sample storage tests

The instrument ran halocarbon measurements continuously throughout a research cruise as part of the 2012 TORERO campaign (chapter 5). During this voyage the instrument collected >800 surface water samples from a continuously pumped seawater inlet and via Niskin bottle samples from numerous CTD profiles. At the start of the campaign the purge efficiency was tested again, which showed that all species had a purge efficiency greater than 90% from seawater. The samples taken from the Niskin bottles from the CTD profiles were filtered and stored in amberised glass bottles, in the dark at around 18°C. The error introduced by this sample handling was measured by re-analysing the same sample from 40 m depth 6 times to simulate any changes from the storage of water from 6 different depths taking into account the length of time required to complete the analysis of each CTD profile (table 2.3).
Figure 2.25 – Purge efficiencies for Evian water at 50°C with 1 L (50 mL min$^{-1}$ for 20 mins) of N$_2$
Figure 2.26 – Reproducibility and carry-over tests for Evian water at 50°C with 1 L (50 mL min$^{-1}$ for 20 mins) of N$_2$. 

95
## Table 2.3
Reproducibility of CTD batch sampled water from 40 m depth, filtered and stored in amberised glass bottles at ambient temperature.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sampling time</th>
<th>CHCl₃</th>
<th>CH₂Br₂</th>
<th>CH₂Cl₂</th>
<th>CH₂BrCl</th>
<th>CH₂BrCl₂</th>
<th>CH₂ClI</th>
<th>CH₂BrCl₂</th>
<th>CH₂Br₂Cl₂</th>
<th>CHBr₂Cl₂</th>
<th>CHBr₂Cl</th>
<th>CH₂I₂</th>
<th>CH₂Br₂</th>
<th>CH₂I₂</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 18:38</td>
<td></td>
<td>100</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>98</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 19:33</td>
<td></td>
<td>100</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>98</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 20:29</td>
<td></td>
<td>80</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 21:24</td>
<td></td>
<td>65</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 22:19</td>
<td></td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13/02/12 23:14</td>
<td></td>
<td>69</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

% Standard deviation: 20.6, 8.2, 54.2, 15.3, 9.0, 18.1, 2.6, 2.8, 7.5, 4.0, 5.6.
2.6.5.3 Underway supply vs. CTD bottles

Table 2.4 – Difference between batch samples taken from 3 m CTDs and 2–5 m underway water supply samples represented by the standard error of the difference between 10 consecutive comparisons.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Mean standard error (%)</th>
<th>Range (standard error %)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>10.8</td>
<td>1.8–44.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl₃</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>2.0–7.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₂H₅I</td>
<td>24.0</td>
<td>1.4–44.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrCl</td>
<td>16.6</td>
<td>0.9–44.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl₄</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>0.1–6.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl₂</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>0.5–14.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Br₂</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>1.6–13.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Cl₂I</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>0.4–20.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₂Cl</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>0.6–3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₃</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>0.0–6.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂I₂</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>0.6–15.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A potential source of error from sampling underway seawater from a ship is from contamination or loss in the ships pumped seawater supply. Water is drawn into the ship at around 3 m depth and pumped to the supply taps in the ship wet labs. These taps are turned on throughout the voyage so the water moves through the system at a high flow rate > 10 L min⁻¹. However, these sample inlets are not installed with trace gas analysis in mind and the pumps and tubing materials used can introduce contamination or induce losses as the water transits the system. It is difficult to obtain information regarding the materials used and the cleaning/maintenance of these inlet systems and as such data obtained via their use should be treated with caution.

In order to ascertain sample integrity, pumped inlet supply samples can be compared to surface CTD samples from Niskin bottles. As the samples are not taken concurrently they cannot be expected to compare directly but should provide an indication of sample
integrity between the two techniques. This approach was used during the TORERO campaign and the results can be seen in table 2.4. This shows that there is good agreement between the two sampling techniques and that it is unlikely either technique introduces major contamination or resulting losses. This analysis is only valid for NOAA vessel Ka'imimoana and use of other sampling systems must be tested accordingly.

2.6.6 Further work

Recent changes and improvements included moving valve c from the top to the bottom of the water trap and is now used to remove water in addition to purging the system post sampling. For the analysis of DMS, filters must be changes after each sample due to cell bursting during filtration.

Although housed in protective casing, the system is quite fragile with glass to Teflon to stainless steel fittings and tube work. A system where these fragile parts are hard mounted with quick-connect purge tubes and water traps would be beneficial for fieldwork on-board ships.

If using one filter per analysis it requires changing each run and is prone to air bubbles and human error. An automated filter change could easily be incorporated using the current electronics but would still introduce air into the system. The greatest issue with air bubbles is for sample volume reproducibility as the system relies upon time and flow rate to introduce the correct volume into the purge tube. A physical detection of water volume such as an infrared sensor would improve this.

Despite careful design of this system and reduction in the error associated with manual purge and trap, major issues remain such as the requirement for filtration and heating of the sample (causing biological cell bursting), the introduction of water vapour into the instrument and electro-mechanical parts which can fail. A membrane-based system where gases could equilibrate into a carrier gas across a hydrophobic membrane without the need for filtration could offer many benefits especially for longer-term sampling.
2.7 Summary

In this chapter the theory of GC, MS and TD was discussed. A complete understanding of each technique is necessary in order to maximise measurement potential and accurately quantify VSLH. New analytical methods were created that take advantage of the latest instrumentation and improve on previous methods with respect to sensitivity, stability and sample throughput.

The use of a cooled glass trap was found to be the most appropriate method for the removal of water from a sample stream and a highly efficient design was produced incorporating Stirling cooler technology. GC methods were tested for various scenarios including a fast method utilising NCI. This method is appropriate for use on an aircraft due to its fast run-time and the increased sensitivity provided by NCI allowing for detection of trace VSLH at altitude.

Instruments were also optimised for use aboard research ships. For analysis of seawater a fully automated purge and trap system was designed and built which runs continuously from a vessels pumped seawater supply whilst still allowing the introduction of batch samples from CTDs.

The automated system offers significant improvements over the previous manual method and has successfully been deployed on 5 research cruises to date, totaling >190 days of continuous sampling.
Chapter 3

Accurate Quantification of VSLH

Several factors currently limit the understanding of spatial and seasonal variability of VSLH. These include measurement, calibration, data processing and modelling issues. These factors are discussed here along with solutions, potential or current, for better constraint of sources and sinks of these important trace gases.

Data from section 3.4 in this chapter has been published in the article:
Chapter 3: Accurate Quantification of VSLH

3.1 Overview

The development of new measurement techniques was discussed in chapter 2 and the next step is to characterise these techniques in terms of their ability to produce precise and accurate quantification of VSLH. Quantification ultimately relies on an accurate calibration standard but first a method must display a predictable and reproducible response to the analytes of interest.

The analyses carried out in this chapter were performed on a TD-GC-MS consisting of a Markes Unity2 and CIA8 coupled to an Agilent 6850/7890 GC and 5975C MSD, the latest instrument development from the previous chapter.

3.2 Calibration

To accurately determine the concentration of a sample the instrument should be calibrated with concentrations spanning the concentration range of the samples. That is the sample concentration must lie within the linear dynamic range (LDR) of the instrument (non-linear calibrations are also possible but must not be extrapolated). When it is impossible to generate a standard with concentrations low enough, it is common practise to extrapolate the instrument response and assume linearity. This method is valid if indeed the response remains linear but that is difficult to prove experimentally.

3.2.1 Linearity and breakthrough tests

Whilst running with an EI source, calibrations were linear down to the lowest point of the calibration range (figure 3.1). Some of the linear fits such as CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$BrI displayed a positive offset, which suggests that at zero concentration the instrument was still detecting those specific ions. This could be due to blank contamination or from poor integration caused by a noisy baseline. For these two gases it is possible that the positive offset is due to them “sticking” on sampling lines, a known problem especially for CH$_2$I$_2$. If positive offsets were encountered during the calibration of samples then a background subtraction would be applied but this issue was later solved by pre-purging sampling lines prior to analysis. As these calibrations remained linear up to 3 L sample volume it can be
Figure 3.1 – Continued over...
Figure 3.1 – TD-GC-MS linearity tests using EI source. Mixing ratios in 3 L of air corresponding to CCl₄ concentration of 86.8 ppt (bottom right graph). Instrument reproducibility shown in table 3.1.
assumed that the breakthrough volume of the trap has not been exceeded and that up to 3 L of sample can be analysed quantitatively.

3.2.2 Linearity tests NCI

Linearity tests using NCI (Figure 3.2) showed that the instrument gave a high response to very low concentrations of analyte but was not linear over large concentration ranges. Interestingly, CH$_2$Cl$_2$ became non-linear at concentrations greater than around 20 ppt whereas CHCl$_3$ looked to be linear beyond this. CCl$_4$ was also non-linear. Clearly care must be taken if working at higher concentrations with NCI and single point calibrations should be avoided. It is unlikely that the non-linearity is caused by adsorbent trap breakthrough of analytes as this was tested using the same sample volumes in EI. Only the negatively charged halogen ions were analysed and it may be possible that for chlorine containing species, where the carbon-chlorine bond is stronger than for bromine or iodine, there is production of a negatively charged molecular ion, which could contribute to the non-linearity.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Mean PA</th>
<th>SD</th>
<th>%SD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>88012</td>
<td>2673</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>144314</td>
<td>4217</td>
<td>2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_4$</td>
<td>1587144</td>
<td>34952</td>
<td>2.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>32762</td>
<td>991</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$ICl</td>
<td>20940</td>
<td>632</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_2$Cl</td>
<td>57763</td>
<td>1515</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$IBr</td>
<td>15558</td>
<td>455</td>
<td>2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_3$</td>
<td>107880</td>
<td>2842</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I$_2$</td>
<td>24205</td>
<td>610</td>
<td>2.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In order to apply these calibration curves to quantify samples it is assumed that the
Figure 3.2 – Continued over...
Figure 3.2 – TD-GC-MS linearity tests using NCI source with methane as the CI gas. Mixing ratios in 1 L of air corresponding to CCl₄ concentration of 86.8 ppt. Instrument reproducibility shown in table 3.1.
instrument response during the calibration remains the same as during the analysis of a sample. In reality the instrument response changes even between subsequent samples (table 3.1). Although the actual %SD during a calibration is $< 3\%$, the longer term stability can vary more (figure 3.5). The resulting error can be minimised by the use of an internal standard.

### 3.2.3 Internal standards

Mass spectrometers are useful detectors for gas chromatographs but their sensitivity can vary significantly between runs. This is especially true of samples containing water which can increase vacuum pressure and quench ion formation. In order to accurately quantify analytes a calibration must be run frequently or an internal standard used to account for sensitivity changes.

An internal standard (IS) is a compound that is spiked into each sample at a known concentration. The response of the instrument to each analyte is normalised to the response to the IS. As the IS remains constant, any fluctuations in sensitivity will be cancelled out.

Addition of an IS to a liquid sample is easy but for gas phase samples the process is more involved. Typical systems involve the addition of a fixed volume loop to the sample flow path to introduce a constant quantity of IS. Knowing the concentration of the IS is not a requirement, so long as it remains constant. An IS must not be present in the sample itself and the difficulty encountered with air samples is that they could potentially contain any compound. For example, toluene cannot be used as an internal standard for air samples as it is already present in air at varying concentration. Instead, un-natural forms of gases are used such as deuterated compounds. These are unlikely ever to be present in air so the instrument response will only reflect the amount added as the IS.

Additionally, the mass spectrometer should have a similar response to the IS as it does to the analytes of interest. Mass spectrometer sensitivity can vary by different amounts for different masses, although this only occurs significantly during re-tuning of the instrument and it is usually assumed that the change in response to the internal standard is similar to the change in response to an analyte.
3.2 Calibration

Figure 3.3 – Reproducibility of an IS addition via the Unity2 loop (squares) compared to carbon tetrachloride (circles) in an air sample. Black markers ran 04/07/2011; white markers ran 05/07/2011.

3.2.3.1 Internal standard loop injections

A commercially available IS addition loop (Markes CIA8) was tested for the addition of 1,2-dibromoethane-d4 during the analysis of VSLH. The loop was 1 mL in volume and made from SilcoSteel (Restek) heated to 50°C. As deuterated compounds are not completely pure (∼99%) and can decompose to form their non-deuterated counterpart, it was decided not to use a deuterated form of a compound which was actually being quantified. The IS gas was created by evacuating an aluminium cylinder (aculife coated), injecting 1 µL of 1,2-dibromoethane-d4 and pressurising to 100 bar with zero grade nitrogen. A 1 mL injection resulted in a peak area response similar in magnitude to the instrument response to atmospheric concentrations in 1 L of air sample.

Unfortunately, reproducibility of the IS loop injections was poor (Figure 3.3). Although the %RSD between injections was often <2%, periodic spikes were observed. In figure 3.3, these spikes are around twice the magnitude and could be the result of a double injection. In other analysis the RSD was substantially worse and despite the loop being heated it is
possible that the IS was sticking to the loop. For an IS addition to be useable it must be consistent and reliable. For these reasons it was decided that loop injections of IS were not suitable for this particular analysis.

### 3.2.3.2 Carbon tetrachloride as an internal standard

A different approach to IS addition is the use of carbon tetrachloride. CCl$_4$ is present in the atmosphere at a known concentration (88.7 pptv in 2008, AGAGE scale, Montzka et al. (2011)) and is well mixed globally. CCl$_4$ was used mainly in the manufacture of CFCs as refrigerants. It is still used to manufacture HCFCs, though its production has been reduced since the Montreal Protocol phase out of CFCs. Its concentration decreases by around 1.1 ppt per annum (AGAGE scale). Therefore, any atmospheric samples taken within a few months should contain approximately the same concentrations of CCl$_4$ within them. Despite the ban, some local sources do exist near urban centres (de Blas et al., 2013).

Figure 3.4 shows carbon tetrachloride measurements in air taken during the TORERO campaign (chapter 5). The peak area response tracks the instrument sensitivity with large jumps coinciding with tuning of the mass spectrometer. The two spikes above $7 \times 10^5$ are likely contaminated, are the result of larger anomalous sample volumes or have heightened
baselines or other integration errors and can be removed from the dataset. The CCl\textsubscript{4} data is then used to ratio the other analytes and compensate for instrument sensitivity drift. This is done using equations 3.1 and 3.2 where PA is the integrated area beneath a chromatogram peak and MRR is the molar response ratio— the response of the mass spectrometer per mole of analyte relative to CCl\textsubscript{4}.

\[
MRR = \frac{\text{Analyte } PA_{\text{std}}}{CCl_4 \ PA_{\text{std}}} \times \frac{[CCl_4]_{\text{std}}}{[\text{Analyte}]_{\text{std}}} \tag{3.1}
\]

\[
[\text{Analyte}]_{\text{sample}} = \frac{\text{Analyte } PA_{\text{sample}}}{CCl_4 \ PA_{\text{sample}}} \times \frac{[CCl_4]_{\text{sample}}}{MRR} \tag{3.2}
\]

### 3.2.3.3 Medium term instrument stability

The ratio to CCl\textsubscript{4} takes into account rapid changes in instrument response during instances of, for example; increased sample humidity, trapping of an incomplete sample volume or incomplete sample desorption. However, instrument sensitivity and its response to individual species will change over time resulting in the response ratio to CCl\textsubscript{4} changing for each species differently. This can be seen in figure 3.5 where the response ratio to CCl\textsubscript{4} for nine VSLH species present in NOAA SX-3570 calibration standard was monitored over a two month period. Although instrument stability is remarkably good over this time period the analysis highlights the requirement for regular external calibration to complement the use of CCl\textsubscript{4} as an internal standard.

It is also worth noting that although these tests were carried out over an extended period of time, the instrument was not used intensively throughout only processing a few hundred samples. During a fieldwork campaign the instrument is used continuously and in the same time period will process an order of magnitude more samples.
3.2.4 Maintaining sample integrity- VSLH compatible materials

Determining the suitability of different materials for use with VSLH is non-trivial and maintaining sample integrity throughout analysis is vital for accurate results. These details are often overlooked or fraught with speculation and personal opinion. In this study, materials were tested by the addition or removal of 1 m of each material from a sample flow path. They were tested for the transmission of $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$, $\text{CHCl}_3$, $\text{CH}_2\text{BrCl}$, $\text{CCl}_4$, $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$, $\text{CHBrCl}_2$, $\text{CH}_2\text{ICl}$, $\text{CH}_2\text{IBr}$, $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2\text{Cl}$, $\text{CHBr}_3$ and $\text{CH}_2\text{I}_2$. The results are summerised in table 3.2.

None of the materials tested suffered a noticeable loss of VSLH along a short length ($< 1 \text{ m}$). Silco-Steel is often used for VSLH analysis but is very expensive and was not found to perform any better than instrument grade stainless steel and some batches of Silco-Steel produced noisy GC baselines. Heating the lines helps prevent condensation and PTFE lines should be used where the line cannot be heated. PTFE and PEEK valves are appropriate and PTFE is a useful material for o-rings, seals and is used in the reed valve bodies of metal bellows pumps (used for air sampling see chapter 5).
3.3 Calibration Sources

Table 3.2 – Material suitability for the analysis of VSLH

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>VSLH loss</th>
<th>Comments</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Silico-Steel (Restek)</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Heated &gt; 30°C to avoid condensation, batch contamination</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instrument grade stainless steel (Restek)</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Heated &gt; 30°C to avoid condensation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PFA</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Contamination peaks and raised baseline</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PTFE</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Porous to some small polar compounds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural PEEK</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Tested only as a valve base material</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.3 Calibration Sources

3.3.1 Permeation Oven

Accurate calibration is possibly the most demanding aspect of VSLH measurement as atmospheric concentrations of VSLH are low–sub parts per trillion (ppt). Liquid standards can be used but often instruments are designed for air sampling and introduction of liquids is not representative. Due to the reactivity of VSLH, gas standards are often unstable and suffer concentration drift or non-linear losses onto cylinder walls or via reaction with other present species.

A permeation oven is a useful method for the dynamic production of low concentrations of VSLH in the gas phase. Each individual organic halogen, as a pure liquid standard, is filled into a permeation tube (Eco Scientific). Permeation tubes consist of combination of porous, PTFE–based polymer and stainless steel tube (figure 3.7) where the length of the steel and polymer sections can vary depending on the desired permeation rate. The longer the polymer section the greater the permeation rate. Zero grade (BOC Gases) nitrogen is passed over the tube and the pure standard evaporates into the gas phase at a steady rate.

Permeation rates are dependent upon the temperature dependant vapour pressure of the liquid standard, the proportional size ratio of steel to polymer and the flow rate of gas (figure A.1). The permeation oven setup is designed to control the rate of transfer of liquid standard into the gas phase to a constant value. This was achieved by housing
Figure 3.6 – Permeation oven schematic. Valve diagram in dashed box shows the valve actuated position to fill the sample loop. Solid lines represent gas tubing and dotted lines control electronics.
3.3 Calibration Sources

twelve permeation tubes, each containing a separate pure liquid organic halogen, between two air-tight glass containers known as permeation vessels which are housed in temperature controlled ovens (figure 3.6). One vessel, containing the more volatile species, was thermostatic at 40°C and the other, containing the less volatile species, at 70°C. Mass flow controlled N\textsubscript{2} was passed through each vessel in turn at 100 mL min\textsuperscript{-1} and flows out to waste, scrubbed by a hydrocarbon trap. The method is described in more detail in Wevill and Carpenter (2004). The system was then modified from this method as part of this body of work, to include automated introduction of one, two or three sample loops consecutively when required by the thermal desorption unit without the need for analyst supervision.

3.3.1.1 Permeation rates

This setup was maintained continuously with no interruption of N\textsubscript{2} supply or deviation of temperature. The permeation tubes were removed from the system every few months and weighed on a mass balance (Kern 770, accurate to 0.01 mg) to determine mass loss between weighings (for mass loss graphs see appendix figure A.1). As the permeation rate is kept constant, the mass loss over time is linear and as such a permeation rate (mol min\textsuperscript{-1}) can be calculated (table 3.3). Non-linearity is discussed in section 3.3.1.3.

3.3.1.2 Instrument calibration using permeation oven

The output of the permeation oven provides parts per million concentrations in the gas phase. This is much too high to be of use for calibration of atmospheric concentrations (ppt). More suitable levels were attained by loop sampling of the permeation oven output. Zero grade N\textsubscript{2} was passed through at 100 mL min\textsuperscript{-1} through a 6-port, 2-position, pneumatically actuated rotary valve (Vici Valco) and 25 µL loop. When a calibration was required the valve was switched so that the loop was in-line with the output from the permeation oven which flowed through the loop and out to waste (figure 3.6). The number of moles of analyte per loop was calculated using equations 3.3 and 3.4:

\[
\text{Moles per loop} = \frac{\text{Mass per loop (g)}}{RMM (g \text{ mol}^{-1})} \tag{3.3}
\]
Table 3.3 – Mass loss rates for VSLH permeation tubes with calculated moles and ppt concentrations per 25 µL loop injection

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Mass loss g yr(^{-1})</th>
<th>Moles /25 µL loop</th>
<th>ppt /25 µL loop</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH(_3)I</td>
<td>1.26</td>
<td>4.24×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>103.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_2)H(_5)I</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>3.67×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>26.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl(_3)</td>
<td>0.92</td>
<td>1.09×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>89.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-C(_3)H(_7)I</td>
<td>0.33</td>
<td>6.38×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>22.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)Br(_2)</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>3.38×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>82.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C(_3)H(_7)I</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>6.86×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>54.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)ClI</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>9.25×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>16.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)BrI</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>2.21×10(^{-12})</td>
<td>14.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr(_2)Cl</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>2.57×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>6.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr(_3)</td>
<td>0.31</td>
<td>5.84×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>14.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)I(_2)</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>5.89×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>3.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_4)</td>
<td>2.06</td>
<td>1.57×10(^{-13})</td>
<td>155.9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[ \text{Mass per loop} = \frac{\text{Permeation rate (g min}\(^{-1}\))}{\text{diluent flow rate (mL min}\(^{-1}\))} \times \text{volume of loop (mL)} \] (3.4)

A 10 µL loop was originally used but had too small an internal diameter (I.D.) and the restriction produced a pressure drop and subsequent ‘over-filling’ of the loop. The 25 µL loop was the smallest possible volume loop with a wider I.D. that would fit around the valve. After a few seconds of filling, the valve was switched back and the contents of the loop swept into the nitrogen flow which was subsequently trapped with a thermal desorption unit. In total 1 L of nitrogen was used to sweep the loop resulting in a dilution of the 25 µL in 1 L. For linear calibrations, multiple loops were injected into the 1 L of N\(_2\).

As the Permeation oven supplies a ‘slug’ of halocarbon rich gas from the sample loop into the nitrogen stream going to the TD cold trap, the volume of sample trapped has no effect on the concentration assuming that all the gas from the loop is swept onto the trap. The
dead volume for the entire transfer line between the permeation oven and TD is < 60 mL (1/8” tubing, 2.5 mm ID, 3 m length). Flow is set at 100 mL min\(^{-1}\) thus 1 min would allow the perm loop slug to clear the transfer line. 1 L (10 min at 100 mL min\(^{-1}\)) of the diluent nitrogen is taken to give the same conditions as sampling 1 L of air or gas standard. For the calculations 1 L is the set sample volume and it is assumed that the loop of perm gas is mixed into 1 L volume.

The number of molecules in 1 L is calculated using the ideal gas law (Equation 3.5):

\[
PV = nRT
\]  

\[
Molecules = \text{Avogadro's constant} \times \left( \frac{PV}{RT} \right)
\]  

It is important to note that the flow, and hence the volume, is controlled by the permeation oven mass flow controller. This gives a mass flow (100 mL min\(^{-1}\)) and this is calculated at standard temperature and pressure (1 atm, 298 K) . Therefore R = 0.08205746 L atm K\(^{-1}\) mol\(^{-1}\) (so, V = 1 L, P = 1 atm and T = 298 K) and ppt per loop in 1 L N\(_2\) is calculated using the following equation:

\[
ppt = \left( \frac{\text{moles} \times \text{Avagadro's constant}}{\text{molecules in 1 L}} \right) \times 1 \times 10^{12}
\]  

To ensure that the permeation loop was fully swept with the 1 L of nitrogen diluent, 10 replicate 25 µL loop injections were performed (Table 3.4) and proved reproducible.

3.3.1.3 Permeation oven drawbacks

There are multiple drawbacks to using the permeation oven method. The system must be kept at a constant temperature and use a constant flow of nitrogen over the tubes. If either fluctuates, the mass loss will change and the calibration will be invalid. This makes the system very difficult to transport.
Chapter 3: Accurate Quantification of VSLH

Table 3.4 – Reproducibility of ten replicate 25 µL permeation loop injections

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>PA %SD</th>
<th>[%SD]</th>
<th>Error (ppt)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>1.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl₃</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₂H₅I</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl₄</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>n/a</td>
<td>n/a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Br₂</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂ICl</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-C₃H₇I</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-C₃H₇I</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₂Cl</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂IBr</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₃</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂I₂</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The permeation oven must be operated over a long time period to measure a significant mass loss and calculate an accurate calibration. The concentration output of the permeation oven is quite high despite only sampling a small loop of the output gas. Calibrations with the permeation oven are carried out at higher concentrations than encountered in atmospheric samples and a linear instrument response below the dynamic range of the calibration must be assumed.

As highlighted in table 3.4, errors < 2% standard deviation can result in uncertainties > 10% of actual atmospheric concentrations (sub-ppt). The concentration of the permeation output can be reduced by reducing the permeation rate but this would result in less mass loss, longer times between weighings and greater weighing error. The sample loop size cannot be reduced without causing a pressure restriction in the system. These drawbacks led to the requirement for stable gas standards to be investigated.

Another drawback with the permeation oven method is the degradation of the pure standard within the permeation tube (figure 3.7). If the composition of the liquid inside the perm tube changes the permeation rate of the specific pure compound will change. Degra-
3.3 Calibration Sources

Figure 3.7 – Permeation tubes with varying permeation window lengths. From top: \( \text{CH}_2\text{I}_2 \), \( 2-\text{C}_3\text{H}_7\text{I} \) and \( \text{CH}_2\text{ICl} \). Liquid discolouration is due to compound decomposition.

\[ \text{dation is likely photolytic thus the tube holders are kept in the dark. Standards tend to degrade after 8 months depending upon the compound but this is difficult to track without constantly disturbing the system. A GC-MS can be used to characterise the degradation by analysing the output but this would require permeation tubes to be stored in separate ovens, each with their own flow and sample loop otherwise it is impossible to know which standard is degrading.} \]

3.3.2 Gas standards

3.3.2.1 Cylinder material and stability

Low concentration gas standards provide the perfect method for calibrating an instrument. They can be transported easily, require no consumables and provide calibration gas instantly on demand. VSLH present a significant challenge when producing low concentration gas standards as their concentrations are often very unstable once compressed into a cylinder. In-order for a gas standard to be useful for calibration, the concentration of its contents must remain constant or, less desirably, increase or decrease at a constant
Chapter 3: Accurate Quantification of VSLH

rate.

Often, humidification of a sample can help to avoid cylinder and sample line losses. In compressing a gas, its output humidity will be reduced by the reciprocal of the cylinder fill pressure in atmospheres. Stability testing of numerous cylinder materials was carried out by NOAA and electro polished stainless steel cylinders (Essex Cryogenics) were found to be the most stable for long-term storage of VSLH (figure 3.8). Stability studies of NOAA halocarbon gas in these cylinders indicate that CH$_3$I, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ mixing ratios are generally relatively stable over this timescale, with drift rates of $< 2$-% yr$^{-1}$ (Butler et al., 2007, supplement).

The National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration- Earth System Research Laboratory (NOAA- ESRL) carried out long term stability tests on six Essex canisters containing continental background mixing ratios of CHBr$_3$, CH$_2$Br$_2$, and CH$_3$I (< 1 ppt) over a three year period (2004–2007; during the International HALocarbons in Air Comparison Experiment (IHALACE), Hall et al. (2013)). All three gases showed no significant concentration change over this time.

3.3.2.2 SX-3570 NOAA VSLH standard

In September 2009, a low concentration gas standard (SX-3570) containing both VSLH and longer-lived halocarbons in modified continental background air (from Niwot Ridge, Colorado) was prepared and analysed by the NOAA-ESRL Global Monitoring Division in Boulder, Colorado. An Essex Cryogenics electro polished stainless steel air sampling cylinder was used and spiked with very low concentrations of VSLH to generate concentrations 2–5 ppt above ambient levels. NOAA-ESRL determined VSLH mixing ratios by GC-MS (Montzka et al., 1993, 1996). Samples were analysed relative to gravimetrically-prepared standards (in Essex cylinders, Butler et al. (2007)).

As ambient air was used, some humidity was retained which is thought to reduce VSLH wall losses in the cylinder. Using ambient air mimics a real air sample matrix and consequently the standard gas contains other non-VSLH species such as hydrocarbons at atmospheric concentrations and terpenoids due to the proximity of forested areas close to the filling site. Table 3.5 lists the CFC’s and VSLH present in the calibration gas and their concentration as quantified either by NOAA or from subsequent comparison with
Figure 3.8 – Long-term stability testing of CH$_3$I in numerous cylinder materials carried out by NOAA-ESRL (Butler et al., 2010). Colours represent different cylinders.
other gas standard mixtures at York University.

Table 3.5 – Composition and NOAA quoted values for gas standard SX-3570.
Provisional scale is based purely on gravimetric data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Concentration (ppt)</th>
<th>SD (ppt)</th>
<th>NOAA scale</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HCFC-141b</td>
<td>20.9</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCFC-142b</td>
<td>21.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HFC-134a</td>
<td>59.5</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>1995</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCFC-22</td>
<td>210.5</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>2006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Cl</td>
<td>575.4</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>2003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Br</td>
<td>14.8</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Cl₂</td>
<td>34.5</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl₃</td>
<td>8.4</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Br₂</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₃</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COS</td>
<td>452</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrCl</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrI</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂ClI</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂I₂</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl₂</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₂Cl</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>provisional</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.3.2.3 VSLH cylinder stability testing

Long-term stability of VSLH in Essex cylinders was studied by intracalibration of two NOAA calibration standards filled two years apart. A NOAA standard gas (SX-3576) was analysed ‘blind’ (concentrations unknown) using the Markes/Agilent system and quantified using a calibration scale from the analysis of SX-3570. The measured concentrations in SX-3576 were then compared to concentrations quoted by NOAA. The measured con-
centrations matched the quoted concentrations to within the quoted error window for the majority of VSLH species. This result confirms that the standard gas SX-3570 has been stable for two years and even difficult compounds such as CH$_2$I$_2$ have not deviated from their original concentrations (Table 3.5). The study also validates the NOAA standard production process from one standard to the next.
### Table 3.6 - Blind Quantification of NOAA Standard SX-3776 using SX-3770. Qion = mass of ion used for quantification.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Measured conc. (ppt)</th>
<th>%SD</th>
<th>NOAA Quoted conc. (ppt)</th>
<th>%difference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>+18.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>10.1</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>-1.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl$_2$</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>+3.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>+3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$BrI</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_2$Cl</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>+4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I$_2$</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>+13.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_3$</td>
<td>98</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3.3.2.4 SilcoCan stability testing

SilcoCans (Thames Restek) are small stainless steel cylinders (2–5 L) with an internal coating designed to create an inert surface and maintain integrity of the contained gases. Exact coating materials are undisclosed but often consist of a silica based coating applied by vapour deposition. The long and short-term stability of these cylinders is important as they are used to collect Whole Air Samples (WAS) from on-board aircraft. Cylinders are filled during aircraft flights and transported back to the lab for later analysis. The stability of gases in these cylinders needs to be sufficient such that the analysis is representative of the air sample at the time of filling the cylinder.

Two SilcoCans (labelled A & B) were evacuated using an Edwards XDS5 scroll vacuum pump then filled directly from the NOAA SX-3570 cylinder to a pressure of 30 psig. Using this standard allowed for testing at concentrations close to ambient levels. They were immediately analysed alongside the SX-3570 standard to ascertain their initial concentrations. SilcoCan A showed elevated CHCl$_3$ concentrations which was likely due to cylinder contamination. The SilcoCans were then analysed periodically over the course of one month. Results showed that the SilcoCans remained remarkably stable over this time period with concentrations decreasing by as little as 0.001 ppt day$^{-1}$ (table 3.7). The concentrations of all species remained linear and would likely continue this trend for an extended time period however a lack of volume (maximum fill pressure 40 psig) required for sampling prohibited the continuation of this study for any longer. These results validate the use SilcoCans for collection of WAS and subsequent quantification of VSLH over time periods of a few weeks.
### Table 3.7 – Stability of VSLH from NOAA SX-3570 stored in SilcoCans

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound Quatification Ion</th>
<th>SX-3570</th>
<th>Silco Can A</th>
<th>Silco Can B</th>
<th>SX-3570</th>
<th>Silco Can A</th>
<th>Silco Can B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>0.8 (±0.1)</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>0.8 (±0.1)</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>0.8 (±0.1)</td>
<td>6.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Cl₂</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrCl₂</td>
<td>1.3 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.3 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.3 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrICl</td>
<td>1.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂ICl₂</td>
<td>2.0 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂IBr₂</td>
<td>2.2 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>2.2 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>2.2 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂ICl₂</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>2.4 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂IBr₂</td>
<td>2.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>2.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>2.6 (±0.1)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Note:** The table details the stability of various chloroform compounds stored in SilcoCans, showing initial and final concentrations with associated standard deviations (%SD).
3.3 Calibration Sources

3.3.3 Comparison of permeation oven with SX-3570

The output of the permeation oven was verified against the NOAA SX-3570 standard. It must be highlighted that the NOAA standard is not necessarily accurate, such that the quoted concentrations of the gas species present may not be exactly the amount present in the cylinder due to errors or losses during its manufacture. Conversely, the permeation oven may not output the exact concentrations calculated (see section 3.3.1.2). Comparing these two calibration techniques does not indicate which technique is better for the quantification of an exact amount but rather the differences between two valid calibration techniques and the magnitude of error associated with this particular analysis.

For the comparison, 10 replicates of 25 \( \mu \text{L} \) loops of permeation gas were analysed followed by 10 replicates of 1 L of NOAA SX-3570. 8 analytes present in SX-3570 were quantified using the permeation oven and compared to the concentrations quoted by NOAA (figure 3.8). \( \text{CH}_3\text{I}, \text{CHCl}_3, \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2, \text{CH}_2\text{ClI}, \text{CH}_2\text{BrI}, \text{CH}_2\text{I}_2 \) showed good agreement with < 0.5 ppt difference. \( \text{CHBr}_3 \) was not in as close agreement and \( \text{CHBr}_2\text{Cl} \) was four times
Table 3.8 – Comparison of the permeation oven calibration system with NOAA SX-3570

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Gravimetric concentration (ppt)</th>
<th>%SD (10 replicates)</th>
<th>Error (ppt)</th>
<th>Quoted concentration (ppt)</th>
<th>%SD (10 replicates)</th>
<th>ppt (using Perm Cal)</th>
<th>Difference (ppt)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>103.8</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>1.84</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>-0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>89.9</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.40</td>
<td>8.4</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>8.1</td>
<td>-0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>82.6</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.50</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$ICl</td>
<td>16.8</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>-0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_2$Cl</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>13.3</td>
<td>9.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Br</td>
<td>14.3</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>-0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_3$</td>
<td>14.4</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>-1.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I$_2$</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>-0.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

greater than quoted. The difference in CHBr$_2$Cl quantification was likely the fault of the permeation oven as the mass loss was non-linear (see appendix for all mass loss graphs) indicating some degradation of this compound in the permeation tube.

This comparison helps to validate previous measurements which utilised the permeation oven as their calibration source (Jones and Carpenter, 2005; Jones et al., 2010, 2009; Carpenter et al., 2007, 2009).

3.4 Intercalibration

3.4.1 UK intercalibration

Due to their large scale variability, VSLH global emission estimates are difficult to predict and can even vary by an order of magnitude (Montzka et al., 2011). With the possible exception of IO and BrO, there are no satellite measurements or indirect tracers for remote sensing of VSLH. Chl-a is often used to define areas of increased biological activity and hence the release of VSLH but correlation between the two is inconsistent. The drawback with collating measurements from multiple institutions is the lack of any established measurement guidelines, collective quality control or intercalibration between the data. This makes it difficult to distinguish between true environmental variation and that arising from differences in measurement and calibration techniques. As such, lack of intercalibration is currently a major limitation for accurate global emission estimates.
Due to cost and time constraints, one single institution cannot possibly obtain enough VSLH measurements to encompass the global distribution and its range of seasonal and temporal variation. Currently the only viable method for globally quantifying VSLH is to combine all of the measurements into one large dataset. This has already been achieved with the release of the HalOcAt (Halocarbons in the Oceans and Atmosphere) database (Ziska et al., 2013).

In 2010, as part of this body of work, the first national UK inter-laboratory comparison for calibrations of VSLH was carried out. The aim of this inter-calibration was to provide transparency between halocarbon calibrations from major UK research institutions, an important step towards enabling all measurements from these institutions to be treated as one coherent integrated dataset for use in global emission estimates and models.

At the time of the intercalibration the stability of some of the shorter lived species stored in Essex cylinders was unknown (now known to be stable, see section Essex cylinder intra-comparison). For this reason it was decided that CH$_3$I, CHBr$_3$ and CH$_2$Br$_2$ would be targeted as their stability was known and these are the most widely reported of VSLH (Butler et al. (2010)). CHBr$_3$ was calibrated based upon the NOAA-2003 scale, whilst CH$_3$I and CH$_2$Br$_2$ were calibrated according to the NOAA-2004 scale. The initial quantification of VSLH in SX-3570 was carried out by NOAA in September 2009. Analyses by UK research groups took place between June and November 2010.

### 3.4.1.1 Analysis of the intercalibration standard

The University of Bristol, University of Cambridge, Plymouth Marine Laboratory (PML), The University of East Anglia (UEA) and The University of York took part in the intercalibration. Each institution employed different methods of analysis and each used a different method of calibration (table 3.9).
Chapter 3: Accurate Quantification of VSLH

Water removal

2L

size

Sample

Scripps secondary

Calibration scale

Table 3.9 – Details of the different analysis techniques employed by the collaborating institutions during the intercalibration.

Pre-concentrating

technique
CP-PoraBOND Q,

Column

technique

Counter-current

0.32 mm ID, 25 m,

Instrument

HayeSep-D at

Nafion

Calibration

Medusa-MS,
-150 to -170 ◦ C

gas
Tertiary
Agilent

Institution
University of
standard

NOAA 2003/2004

250 mL

York- permeation

NOAA 2003/2004

oven

1–2 L

standards

20 mL

standard, Linde

Bristol (Mace

MXT 502.2, 0.18 mm

Gas Ltd primary,

Dry helium trap

5 µm film Varian

6890-5973,

Carboxen

NIES (CH3 I).

µ-Dirac GC-ECD

ID, 20 m, 1µm film

Agilent HP-5MS,

PML-Liquid

(now Agilent)

(J-128)

NOAA

purge

Counter-current

25 m, 0.25 mm ID,

0.5–2.0 L

EI-SIM-MS

Head)

University of

1016/1001 at
Markes sorbent

SX-3568
Agilent GC-MS

tubes, adsorbent

Cambridge
Pure liquid

6890-5973N

cold trap at

15◦ C
Agilent DB-VRX,

Plymouth Marine
standards in

EI-SIM-MS,

60 m, 0.32 mm ID

Nafion

Laboratory
MeOH

Agilent GS-GasPro,

Multi-bed

Nafion

30 m, 0.32 mm ID

Agilent

adsorbent trap-

Mg(ClO4 )2

6850-5975C

Tenax, Carbopak,

-78◦ C

-10◦ C

6890-magnetic

Markes Unity TD

standard-

sector MS

HayeSep-D at

air in

(Waters

Agilent

Aculife

AutoSpec

Permeation

GC-MS,

Carboxen at

Premier)

cylinder

Internal

(PML)

UEA

York

oven

EI-SIM-MS,

-20◦ C

0.25µm film

Markes Unity 2

130


3.4.1.2 Results from the intercalibration

Because each institution used a different method of analysis and calibration, the intercalibration data is representative of a scenario where multiple datasets have been collected and collated. Bristol used their own self-prepared calibration standard (J-128) consisting of real air filled into an Essex cylinder (using a SA-6 RIX Industries compressor) during relatively clean conditions at Trinidad Head (41°N, 124°W) and measured against secondary standards at Scripps Institution of Oceanography (SIO) to check for drift before and after usage. For CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$, calibrations values were assigned by comparison to a commercial gas standard (Linde Gas Ltd.) and for CH$_3$I, a preliminary calibration was assigned via comparison to a gas standard provided by Dr. Y. Yokouchi (National Institute for Environmental Studies, NIES, Japan). Despite having no link to the NOAA calibration scale, their analysis of CHBr$_3$ and CH$_3$I matched the NOAA quoted values closely. However, they were much lower in their analysis of CH$_2$Br$_2$ when compared to the other institutions and the quoted values. Bristol uses a GC-MS system called MEDUSA that is part of the AGAGE network (Miller et al., 2008). The MEDUSA system is a large, lab based system that employs a cryogenic trap for refocusing. By running calibration standards and air samples alternately, this system is able to achieve very high precision.

Cambridge employs a vastly different approach with their $\mu$-Dirac instrument (Robinson et al., 2000). This system was designed to be launched on-board a balloon to collect atmospheric vertical profiles. As such it is extremely compact with very low power consumption. It was the only non-MS system used in this intercomparison, instead taking advantage of the size and sensitivity of an ECD (see chapter 2, section 2.3.3). Due to an ECDs sensitivity a very small, un-cooled adsorbent trap may be used to pre-concentrate just a few hundred mL of sample. An ECD is selective to electrophilic analytes but unlike an MS it only has one detector channel. Where an MS can utilise SIM to extract specific ions and de-convolute co-eluted peaks, an ECD relies solely upon chromatographic separation.

Due to power and size constraints of the GC system of Cambridge’s $\mu$-Dirac, the current GC column configuration results in incomplete separation of the CH$_3$I peak which displays an interfering shoulder peak. This can be seen in the intercalibration results although the quantification is still within 2$\sigma$ of the NOAA quoted values. For the same reasons, the
Figure 3.10 – Intercalibration results of CHBr$_3$ (blue), CH$_3$I (red) and CH$_2$Br$_2$ (green). Solid coloured lines correspond to the NOAA quoted concentration and dotted lines show the estimated 2 $\sigma$ error in the NOAA values.
\( \mu \)-Dirac system cannot resolve \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) from \( \text{CHBrCl}_2 \) and both are quoted as a combined value. The concentration of \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) quoted by Cambridge for this intercalibration was calculated by subtraction of the NOAA quoted \( \text{CHBrCl}_2 \) concentration from the total \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 + \text{CHBrCl}_2 \) concentration analysed. Despite this, \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) compared very well. This is likely due to Cambridge already using the NOAA scale for their calibration and highlights instrumental errors rather than calibration differences.

From the results of the intercalibration it would appear that Plymouth Marine Laboratorys analysis is the least comparable to the other institutions and the NOAA quoted values. However, this test was centred on the analysis of a standard gas cylinder and PML’s analysis method was designed for water sampling. They did not use a gas calibration standard but instead introduced liquid standards from diluted pure compounds onto sorbent tubes that were then desorbed onto a cooled adsorbent trap prior to analysis by GC-MS. The intercalibration standard was also sampled onto a sorbent tube before analysis. This method is more suited to water analysis and it is possible that lighter compounds such as \( \text{CH}_3\text{I} \) can be lost from the sorbent tubes before analysis. With this in mind the results were surprisingly comparable with the NOAA quoted values and the use of liquid standards validates the accurate production of the NOAA standard gas. It is useful to see the differences in values obtained with different pre-concentration methods in addition to differences in separation and analysis and the participation of PML in this study increases our understanding of dataset limitations.

The University of East Anglia used a high resolution MS for their analysis. This is a large and very power heavy instrument, the opposite approach to that of Cambridge’s \( \mu \)-Dirac. UEA calibrated against a gas standard prepared in an aluminium aculife\textsuperscript{TM} (Scott Specialty Gas) cylinder filled with remote tropospheric air from Niwot Ridge near Boulder, USA which was quantified with reference to two NOAA VSLSH standards obtained from, and calibrated by, NOAA-ESRL in 2009. This links the UEA standard to the 2003 NOAA scale for \( \text{CHBr}_3 \) and the 2004 scale for \( \text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2 \) and \( \text{CH}_3\text{I} \). Aculife cylinders are not always very stable over long time periods (figure 3.8) but in this case the UEA values compared well to NOAA quoted values.

Measurements at the University of York were carried out using the Perkin Elmer TD-GC-MS described in chapter 2, section 2.5.1. The permeation oven method described in section 3.3.1 was used to quantify SX-3570 as this was the calibration method used
Chapter 3: Accurate Quantification of VSLH

prior to using the NOAA scale. CHBr$_3$ displayed good agreement but CH$_3$I and CH$_2$Br$_2$
were slightly under and over-reported, respectively. This analysis validates the use of the
permeation oven and the full comparison of all species is discussed in section 3.3.3.

Another interesting observation from the intercalibration is the use of different water re-
moval techniques (water removal techniques are covered in chapter 2 section 2.4.4.). Three
different techniques are used here: Nafion, Mg(ClO$_4$)$_2$ and dry Helium purge. Although
the NOAA standard SX-3570 is primarily ambient air, it does not contain high humidity.
The data does at least show that multiple water removal techniques can be employed
whilst maintaining the integrity of the quantification.

3.4.2 US intercalibration

During the TORERO campaign (chapter 5), the NOAA SX-3570 standard was inter-
compared with two research institutions in the US. A SilcoCan was evacuated and filled
to 30 psi from SX-3570. This was then analysed against SX-3570 and compared well.
The SilcoCan was used as its stability was known from the previous tests (section 3.3.2.4).
This was then sent to Eric Apel at NCAR (National Centre for Atmospheric Research) in
Boulder Colorado. The cylinder was analysed using the TOGA GC-MS (Trace Organic
Gas Analyser) regularly operated on-board the NSF/NCAR GV research aircraft (Apel
et al., 2003). SX-3570 was then quantified using a variety of calibration methods (table
3.10).

The results show that the NCAR calibrations are comparable to the NOAA SX-3570
standard, if not during in-flight calibration, during later lab tests but highlight the vari-
ability of different calibration techniques. The intercalibration allowed direct comparison
of TORERO data from both ship and aircraft showing the importance of intercalibration
exercises. The SilcoCan was then sent to the University of Miami, Marine and Atmo-
spheric Chemistry, RSMAS, Miami, Florida but the results of this analysis had not been
received at the time of writing.
Table 3.10 – Results of an intercalibration exercise with NCAR using various calibration techniques

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>NCAR lab (ppt)</th>
<th>NOAA air spike (ppt)</th>
<th>NOAA Gravimetric</th>
<th>NOAA in-flight</th>
<th>SX-3570</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHI</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>3.71</td>
<td>3.8 (±0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH2Br2</td>
<td>2.25</td>
<td>2.04</td>
<td>2.39</td>
<td>2.13</td>
<td>2.6 (±0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr3</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>5.14</td>
<td>5.89</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>5.4(±0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH2BrCl</td>
<td>7.43</td>
<td>5.87</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>6.71</td>
<td>5.8(±0.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH2BrI</td>
<td>1.79</td>
<td>1.49</td>
<td>2.03</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>1.4(±0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH2I2</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>1.12</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.72</td>
<td>0.8 (±0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr2Cl</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>3.53</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1.64</td>
<td>3.7 (±0.2)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.4.2.1 Ambient air intercomparison

The TOGA instrument was inter-calibrated with the York air GC-MS directly after the TORERO campaign. During the campaign the GV aircraft over-passed or flew close to the vicinity the boat on five occasions. This allowed for an intercomparison of the two instruments as they sampled roughly the same air masses. On some occasions the sampling occurred at different times and locations and the altitude was always greater for the GV but the data does allow for comparison of instrumentation and calibration during operation in ambient conditions, rather than in laboratory tests, which is invaluable. When interpreting the results from these overpasses it is worth noting that an air parcel in contact with the surface ocean can travel a significant lateral distance before it is transported vertically, even to just 100 ft. As many of the VSLH have extremely short lifetimes, the concentration at 100 ft above the ship or even downwind can be significantly different than that measured from the ship itself.

Of the five overpasses, RF13 and RF17 are the most comparable due to the low altitude at which the plane flew. RF13 intersected the cruise track around 4 hours after the ship whereas RF17 flew directly over the ship. From the data it appears that the time delay of RF13 did not contribute a significant difference in the concentrations measured. Chloroform and dibromomethane appear comparable between platforms which could be due to their relatively long local lifetimes of 149 and 123 days, respectively compared to bromo-
### Table 3.11

Comparison of measured air concentrations between the KA and GV at similar times and locations during aircraft overpasses of the ship.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>RF13</th>
<th>RF15</th>
<th>RF16</th>
<th>RF17</th>
<th>RF18</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Time (GMT)</strong></td>
<td><strong>Latitude (°N)</strong></td>
<td><strong>Longitude (°E)</strong></td>
<td><strong>Altitude (ft)</strong></td>
<td><strong>Compound (pptv)</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:00 &lt;</td>
<td>10:00</td>
<td>10:00</td>
<td>10:00</td>
<td>10:00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
<td>00'00&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-7.4</td>
<td>-7.4</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>6.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120°00'00&quot;</td>
<td>120°00'00&quot;</td>
<td>120°00'00&quot;</td>
<td>120°00'00&quot;</td>
<td>120°00'00&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.02</td>
<td>5.02</td>
<td>5.02</td>
<td>5.02</td>
<td>5.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
<td>0.00'00&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101.0</td>
<td>SL</td>
<td>454</td>
<td>SL</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CH</strong>&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;I</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>0.56</td>
<td>0.49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;HCl</td>
<td>5.13</td>
<td>4.86</td>
<td>8.09</td>
<td>7.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;BrCl</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>nd</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;Br</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>0.90</td>
<td>1.05</td>
<td>0.95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;ICl</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>nd</td>
<td>&lt;0.00</td>
<td>nd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CH</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;Cl</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CH</strong>&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;C</td>
<td>1.39</td>
<td>2.08</td>
<td>1.08</td>
<td>2.086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong>&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;I</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
<td>nd</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
<td>nd</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*SL is abbreviated from Sea Level*
3.5 Summary

The importance of accurate calibration of an instrument cannot be over-stated. For a TD-GC-MS this begins with ensuring that the sample introduction is representative by testing pre-concentration trap breakthrough. The system must be able to deal with large changes in sample humidity and analyte concentration and it should be possible to run a blank, post-sample. The reproducibility of the method must then be assessed which includes the sample pre-concentration, chromatographic method and detector response. The detector should remain linear across the dynamic range of the samples if a linear calibration response is assumed.

Once the instrument performance is well constrained, it is necessary to provide an accurate and stable calibration source which is representative of the sample. The use of a permeation oven was tested, automated and compared to compressed gas standards. A permeation oven can provide accurate calibration and remain stable for long periods of time but requires long periods to stabilise before calibrations are accurate and it is difficult to produce concentrations at levels representative of VSLH atmospheric mixing ratios.

The NOAA calibration standard SX-3570 in an electropolished stainless steel cylinder (Essex Cryogenics) proved to remain stable for >3 years and provided the best calibration method for VSLH. SilcoSteel (Restek) canisters were also tested for stability and were found to be stable for all VSLH measured over a few months. This validates their use for whole air sampling (WAS) aboard aircraft. The NOAA scale was adopted in 2009 and the SX-3570 standard used for both campaigns discussed in this thesis, TROMPEX and TORERO.

Multiple UK and US institutions were intercalibrated using NOAA SX-3570 for CH$_3$I, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$. All institution’s results agreed with much less variation than current variability in global flux estimates but would benefit from the use of a common calibration scales with the NOAA scale proposed.
Chapter 4

Halocarbons in the Tropical Atlantic Ocean

The tropical marine atmosphere is a highly important region for atmospheric chemistry as the oceans are a massive source of important trace gases and aerosols. Equatorial and tropical regions have high photochemical activity (Horowitz et al., 2003) which has implications for the production and loss of tropospheric OH radicals and ozone. VSLH are an important control on tropospheric ozone and source gas injection into the upper troposphere/lower stratosphere occurs predominantly in the tropics so the measurement of species that are able to perturb stratospheric ozone is of increased importance in this region (Bridgeman et al., 2000). The trade winds provide relatively predictable air mass trajectories and drive coastal upwelling, enhanced along the coast of Mauritania.

Data from this chapter has been published in the article:
4.1 Aircraft measurements of VSLH over the tropical Atlantic Ocean

In September 2009, atmospheric mixing ratios of CH$_3$I, C$_2$H$_5$I, CH$_2$ICl, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ were quantified from Whole Air Samples (WAS) taken aboard the FAAM BAe 146-301 atmospheric research aircraft at 144 points spanning a longitudinal range of 30°, between 30°N and 10°S at various altitudes during flights over the tropical Atlantic Ocean as part of the TRade wind Ozone Photochemistry EXperiment (TROMPEX).

It has been suggested that biologically active oceanic upwelling regions are a major localised source of VSLH emissions (Quack and Wallace, 2003) and that in tropical regions, where vertical transport times are short, this may contribute a substantial fraction of CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ to the upper troposphere/lower stratosphere (Quack et al., 2004).

Figure 4.1 – Sea surface temperature (SST) along the African coast and east equatorial Atlantic during the TROMPEX campaign. Measured by the MODIS satellite, image courtesy of NEODAAS. Colour scale in °C.
If upwelling is a significant source of reactive bromine, controls on the production and release of brominated VSLH species in these regions would impart a subsequent control over tropospheric and possibly stratospheric ozone concentrations. Salawitch (2006) suggested that atmospheric VSLH concentrations in upwelling regions are sensitive to temperature, nutrient supply and upwelling and that future changes in climate could result in higher concentrations if the atmosphere was to warm. Increased VSLH concentrations might then lower tropospheric and stratospheric ozone levels. More recent analysis has shown that oceanic emissions of these species from the Mauritanian upwelling region cannot explain the high atmospheric concentrations observed in this region (Quack et al., 2007a; Carpenter et al., 2009; Liu et al., 2013b,a).

Figure 4.2 – Surface chlorophyll-a concentration along the African coast and east equatorial Atlantic during the TROMPEX campaign. Measured by the MODIS satellite, image courtesy of NEODAAS. Colour scale in mg m$^{-3}$.

Carpenter et al. (2009) show that east tropical Atlantic upwelling along the African coast is an enhanced VSLH source region but is likely not of major global significance due to the small geographical area of these regions which only account for about 2.5% of the
Chapter 4: Halocarbons in the Tropical Atlantic Ocean

global ocean. Similarly, coastal regions provide a large VLSH flux per unit area (Carpenter et al., 2001) but only comprise around 0.1% of the ocean surface (Ryther, 1969). Emissions from high productivity regions, such as coastal upwellings, are therefore only estimated to account for around 1% of the global emission estimate (Carpenter et al., 2009).

Very recently, Ashfold et al. (2013) have modelled emissions from high productivity, coastal regions in the west tropical Pacific and extrapolated them for the entire tropics (20°N–20°S band). Their resulting emissions estimates are similar to previous studies (Ordóñez et al., 2012; Pyle et al., 2011; Liang et al., 2010; Warwick et al., 2006) and suggest that coastline emissions are no more significant than that of the rest of the ocean.

Very high air concentrations previously measured in this region could be attributed to an unknown coastal or continental source with air masses originating from the African continent. The use of an aircraft in TROMPEX gave a wide spatial coverage and allowed for a more detailed investigation of air mass origins and their link to VSLH concentrations. At the time of publication of the TROMPEX results there were no aircraft measurements of very short-lived iodocarbons, excluding CH$_3$I, from an aircraft. These measurements are vital to constrain any contribution of CH$_2$ICl to O$_3$ loss occurring above the MBL.

4.1.1 Methodology

TROMPEX was the first analysis VSLH in air samples, taken from an aircraft, performed at the University of York. This involved slight adaptation of the instrumentation (section 4.1.1.2) and verification of sample integrity (section 3.3.2.3).

4.1.1.1 BAE-146

The BAE-146 is a large research aircraft operated by FAAM (Facility for Airborne Atmospheric Measurements). It carries a payload of core scientific instrumentation but can also be fitted with instruments specific to certain roles. For this work the aircraft was fitted out for Whole Air Sample (WAS) collection.
4.1 Aircraft measurements of VSLH over the tropical Atlantic Ocean

Core instruments used to complement the WAS samples included carbon monoxide concentration using an Aerolaser 5002 fast fluorescence CO analyser and $\text{O}_3$ concentration using a Thermo Scientific TE49C UV photometric $\text{O}_3$ analyser.

### 4.1.1.2 Whole Air Sampling (WAS) samples

WAS samples are discrete samples of air collected in 3 L SilcoCan cylinders (Thames Restek) during a flight. Air was drawn in through a forward facing air sampling pipe on the exterior of the aircraft and pressurised into the canisters using a metal bellows pump (Senior Aerospace) to approximately 3 bar. The aircraft can be fitted with 64 canisters per flight and 3 sets of 64 canisters were available. The WAS cylinders were housed in cases of
8, 9 or 15 with all cylinders in each case connected to a common manifold. Cylinders are opened to the manifold via a pneumatically operated 2-way valve (Swagelok). The valves are all fed from a compressed airline connection on the case and individually actuated using solenoid valves. After being filled aboard the aircraft they are taken back to the lab to be analysed. In order to fully automate the sampling of the WAS cylinders by the TD-GC-MS, a custom built control unit named La Vespa was used. This Labview software based device takes a signal from the thermal desorption unit and starts a timer. The WAS cylinders are opened before the TD unit starts collecting a sample in order to pre-purge the lines and remain open for the sampling duration. The cylinders are automatically closed post-sampling. The La Vespa software opens each cylinder consecutively until all cylinders are sampled. Up to two cases can be run at any one time.

4.2 Experimental

Sampling was carried out onboard the FAAM BAe 146-301 research aircraft in the boundary layer and lower free troposphere between the Canary Islands, the island of Sao Vicente in the Cape Verde archipelago, and the Mauritanian upwelling, from the 7–9th September 2009 (flights B475–B479). The position of the upwelling was identified during the flight as corresponding to a 1–2°C drop in sea surface temperature (SST) measured from a downward facing (Heimann KT 19.82) radiometer mounted to the exterior of the aircraft, later confirmed from MODIS chlorophyll-a averaged data for the week of the flight (7th–14th September 2009) (figure 4.2). The algal bloom size appears slightly smaller relative to previous campaigns in this area (Carpenter et al., 2009; Quack et al., 2007a).

Air samples were collected at an average frequency of 1 min⁻¹, pressurised into evacuated 3 L Silco Steel® (Restek Corporation) cylinders at 2–3.25 bar using a metal bellows pump (Senior Aerospace). Samples were analysed at the University of York within two weeks of being collected. Analysis was carried out using a Perkin Elmer AutosystemXL gas chromatograph coupled to a Perkin Elmer Turbomass mass selective detector with an electron ionization source and operating in single ion mode (SIM). The Perkin Elmer TDU was used and equipped with the on-line air sampling accessory. This allowed for gas phase samples to be introduced directly onto the Peltier- cooled absorbent trap.
Figure 4.5 – NOAA Hysplit backtrajectories along flight track overlaid onto Chl-a MODIS February 2009 average (NASA, Giovanni). White circles represent air sampling points. Colours represent air mass origin categories, blue: trade wind trajectories, pink: trade wind, moderate upwelling influence, green: trade wind, strong upwelling influence, red: African, terrestrial origin, orange: southerly (hurricane) air.
3 L of each sample was passed through an ME\textsuperscript{TM}-series Nafion\textsuperscript{®} moisture exchanger and a counterflow MD\textsuperscript{TM}-series Nafion\textsuperscript{®} gas drier (Permapure\textsuperscript{TM}) prior to pre-concentration of volatile components on a Peltier cooled (-30\(^\circ\)C) adsorbent trap (Perkin Elmer TurboMatrix300). Analytes were thermally desorbed at 300\(^\circ\)C, and separated using a CP-PoraBOND Q column (0.32 mm ID, 25 m, 5 \(\mu\)m, Varian Chrompack). CH\textsubscript{3}I was quantified using the CH\textsubscript{3}I\textsuperscript{+} ion (\(m/z\) 142) with I\textsuperscript{+} (\(m/z\) 127) as a qualifier ion. C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{5}I, CH\textsubscript{2}ICl, CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl, CH\textsubscript{3}Br\textsubscript{2} and CHBr\textsubscript{3} responses were measured using \(m/z\) 156/127, 176/178, 129/127, 174/176 and 173/171 as quantification/qualification ions, respectively.

VSLH were calibrated according to the NOAA (National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration) 2003/2004 scale (excluding C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{5}I) using gas standard SX-3570 (created 2009). Because this standard was not available during the TROMPEX analysis period, calibration was performed using a permeation oven system (Wevill and Carpenter, 2004) used routinely in the laboratory to provide parts per trillion (ppt) gas phase halocarbon.

\textbf{Figure 4.6} – Schematic of the instrument used for the analysis of WAS cylinders during the TROMPEX campaign. Solid lines represent gas lines and dashes represent electrical connections.
mixtures from dynamic dilution of each pure compound with a N₂ flow over the permeation tubes (Eco Scientific). Comparison of the permeation oven system to the NOAA standard in November 2009 provided the necessary data to adopt the NOAA scale for this dataset (excluding C₂H₅I). The agreement between these scales ranged from 2–22% (Jones et al. (2011), chapter 3 section 3.3.3).

The SX-3570 standard consists of 18 halogenated species at parts per trillion concentrations in a 35 L electropolished air sampling cylinder (Essex Cryogenics). The concentration of CH₃I, CH₂Br₂, and CHBr₃ in the gas standard is known to be stable and scale relationships are available publicly (http://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/hats/standard/scales.html). CH₂ICl and CHBr₂Cl concentrations are based on a preliminary scale with the stability in the Essex cylinder unknown. The stability of the standard SX-3570 was tested by intra-comparison with an equivalent NOAA standard- SX-3576 created in 2011 (chapter 3, section 3.3.2.3). The cylinder SX-3576 was analysed 'blind' and quantified using SX-3570. The concentrations measured in SX-3576 matched the concentrations quoted by NOAA to within 8% for the maximum deviation CH₃I, showing good stability for all compounds.
4.3 Results and Discussion

4.3.1 Air Mass Origins

NOAA HYSPLIT (HYbrid Single Particle Lagrangian Integrated Trajectory model) 3-day back trajectories were calculated for the time and location of each data point in order to establish the origin of the air parcel at each specific latitude, longitude and altitude where samples were collected. The data was then categorised according to five distinct air mass origins (figure 4.5).

The majority of the air masses followed the expected northeasterly trade winds and travelled parallel to the African coastline, without any contribution from continental air. A few of the air masses arriving at high altitude originated from over Africa; moderate levels of CO (77–83 ppb) and O\(_3\) (23–25 ppb) in these air masses indicated they were not strongly influenced by anthropogenic or biomass burning sources. VSLH levels in these air masses were not depleted, and in some cases were enhanced, relative to those in open ocean trajectories suggesting either a terrestrial source or strong coastal input (figure 4.7). High O\(_3\) (Blue +, figure 4.7. E) was observed in open ocean trajectories over the Canaries which will have significant European influence (figure 4.5).

The presence of hurricane Fred, south of flight B477 (09/09/2009) which travelled west from Cape Verde islands at 17°N, produced unusual, southerly trajectories which looped around and were possibly influenced by the southern hemisphere African continent. This is supported by the unusual CO and O\(_3\) concentrations for these trajectories (figure 4.7. E, F) which displayed relatively low O\(_3\) characteristic of southern hemisphere air masses but also enhanced CO which may be attributable to African biomass burning. O\(_3\) concentrations are noticeably higher over the upwelling region, this could be attributed to the emission of NO\(_x\) from shipping close to the coast of Mauritania.

4.3.2 Iodocarbons

Average VSLH mixing ratios measured during TROMPEX are shown in table 4.1. CH\(_2\)I\(_2\) was not detected in any of the canister samples, likely due to its rapid photolysis (<5 min (Montzka et al., 2011)) resulting in levels below the limit of detection at the altitudes
4.3 Results and Discussion

**Figure 4.7** – Vertical profiles of measured VSLH, CO and $O_3$ categorised into separate air mass origins. H. inset shows $CH_2Br_2/CHBr_3$ ratio with open blue circles representing free tropospheric samples.
Figure 4.8 – Continued over...
4.3 Results and Discussion

Sampled. The mean MBL mixing ratio of CH$_2$ICl of 0.27 pptv agrees well with springtime measurements in the western north Pacific of 0.27 pptv (Kurihara et al., 2010) and previous measurements made in the Mauritanian upwelling region of 0.24 pptv in the summer of 2007 (Jones et al., 2010). The mean mixing ratio however, is skewed by the presence of the upwelling and by changes in altitude.

Outside of the upwelling region, the average MBL background level was between 0.1–0.2 pptv (Figure 4.8) which is more consistent with coastal measurements of 0.11 pptv at Mace Head, Ireland (Carpenter et al., 1999, 2000), 0.1 pptv at Christmas Island (Varner et al., 2008) and with long term measurements at Hateruma Island (East of Taiwan, 24°3’N 123°48’E) and Cape Ochiishi (Oshiishinishi, Nemino, Hokkaido 43°9’N 145°30’E) of 0.12 pptv and 0.18 pptv, respectively (Yokouchi et al., 2011).

To our knowledge these are the first airborne measurements of CH$_2$ICl reported to date. Due to its short atmospheric photodissociation lifetime of $\approx$ 2 hours (Rattigan et al., 1997) mixing ratios of CH$_2$ICl at altitudes >MBL ($\approx$ 500 m) were very low (< 0.02 pptv). This suggests that the majority of CH$_2$ICl is photolysed below 500 m, releasing iodine atoms into the boundary layer. Figure 4.8 shows that mixing ratios of CH$_2$ICl in the MBL (defined as 500 m above mean sea level in this region shown by NOAA Hysplit analysis)
were elevated above background over the open-ocean as well as over the Mauritanian upwelling, a known source region (Jones et al., 2010).

Concentrations were higher in the morning than in the afternoon presumably due to rapid photolysis of CH$_2$ICl; this was also apparent in the two flights between the Canaries and Cape Verde Islands (Figure 4.9, Top). Back trajectory analyses (Figure 4.5) showed that the open ocean regions with elevated CH$_2$ICl corresponded to trade wind and hurricane influenced air masses of marine origin. These air masses had not been influenced by any coastal or upwelling regions for at least 24 hours, which is more than ten times the photolytic lifetime of CH$_2$ICl. CH$_2$ICl can be produced directly from phytoplankton or indirectly from the photolysis of CH$_2$I$_2$ in surface seawater (Martino et al., 2005; Jones and Carpenter, 2005). The observations suggest an open ocean, possibly phytoplankton derived source of either CH$_2$ICl, its precursor CH$_2$I$_2$, or both. Moore and Tokarczyk (1993) observed enhanced seawater concentrations of CH$_2$ICl at open ocean sites compared to coastal regions and suggest a plankton source due to maxima in near-surface water (top 200 m).

During the open ocean flights between the Canaries (25°N) and Cape Verde Islands (17°N), a latitudinal dependence of CH$_2$ICl and C$_2$H$_5$I was observed with their concentrations doubling and quadrupling, respectively. The mixing ratio increased with decreasing latitude between these latitudes and broadly corresponded to changes in sea surface temperature (figure 4.9). CH$_2$ICl fluxes measured during the RHaMBLe (Reactive Halogens in the Marine Boundary Layer) campaign conducted in the same geographical region between the Canaries and Cape Verde Islands in summer 2007 (figure 4.9, bottom, Jones et al. (2010)) showed a similar pattern, thus it can be suggested that the latitudinal dependence of MBL iodinated VSLH may be driven by temperature or photochemically driven processes in the surface ocean.

CH$_3$I was measured in all of the samples but due to problems with the calibration at the time of analysis, the concentrations could not be quantified. The trend in the CH$_3$I data was very similar to CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ (Section 4.3.3) with concentrations increasing over the upwelling region. CH$_3$I concentrations also increased with decreasing latitude, similarly to CH$_2$ICl, although did not show elevated amounts over the open ocean.

The mean C$_2$H$_5$I mixing ratio was 0.13 pptv, in agreement with measurements from
Figure 4.9 – Top: CH$_2$ICl concentrations measured during TROMPEX. Black squares are flight B476 from Canaries to Cape Verde Islands (07:16–10:00 08/09/09) and open circles are flight B478 returning to the Canary Islands two days later (15:16–17:30 10/09/09). Red and blue lines are the sea surface temperatures (SST) measured during each flight respectively. Bottom: Black squares denote CH$_2$ICl fluxes measured during the RHaMBLe cruise (Jones et al., 2010). Red line denotes measured SST.
### Chapter 4: Halocarbons in the Tropical Atlantic Ocean

#### Table 4.1 – Overview of measured VSLH concentrations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>MBL</th>
<th>MBL Open Ocean</th>
<th>Upwelling&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
<th>Free Troposphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHCl&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>17.8 (11.8–32.7)</td>
<td>15.1 (11.7–20.0)</td>
<td>23.3 (20.2–26.3)</td>
<td>14.2 (10.9–19.3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;H&lt;sub&gt;5&lt;/sub&gt;I&lt;sup&gt;b&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>0.1 (nd–0.7)</td>
<td>0.05 (nd–0.14)</td>
<td>0.2 (0.1–0.7)</td>
<td>0.1 (nd–0.3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;ICl</td>
<td>0.3 (nd–0.7)</td>
<td>0.2 (nd–0.4)</td>
<td>0.6 (0.4–0.7)</td>
<td>0.1 (nd–0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;Br&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>1.1 (0.1–2.6)</td>
<td>0.9 (0.6–1.2)</td>
<td>2.1 (1.7–2.6)</td>
<td>0.8 (0.5–1.3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>1.2 (0.1–4.8)</td>
<td>0.5 (0.2–1.1)</td>
<td>4.0 (3.4–4.8)</td>
<td>0.3 (0.1–1.3)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup> Upwelling defined as average concentration directly above upwelling area. Filtered positionally using Modis Chl-a and GPS.

<sup>b</sup> C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>5</sub>I not on NOAA scale, permeation oven method used.

Hateruma Island (0.15 pptv) and Cape Ochiishi (0.08 pptv, Yokouchi et al. (2011)), Asian seas (0.09 pptv, Yokouchi et al. (1997)) and at Mace Head (0.06 pptv, Carpenter et al. (1999)).

#### 4.3.3 Bromocarbons

CHBr<sub>3</sub> and CH<sub>2</sub>Br<sub>2</sub> both showed distinct upwelling influence (figure 4.7.A, B) with CHBr<sub>3</sub> concentrations increasing to 3–5 pptv, more than three fold higher than the mean background MBL CHBr<sub>3</sub> concentration in that area. Bromocarbon levels in the southerly air masses were similar to, although at the low end, of those in northern hemisphere open ocean air. CH<sub>2</sub>Br<sub>2</sub> concentrations were strongly correlated to those of CHBr<sub>3</sub> ($R^2 = 0.89$) throughout the flights (figure 4.7.H (inset)).

The injection of fresh emissions from the upwelling into the free troposphere is indicated in figure 4.7.H which shows CH<sub>2</sub>Br<sub>2</sub>/CHBr<sub>3</sub> ratios grouped by air mass origin. CH<sub>2</sub>Br<sub>2</sub> has an atmospheric lifetime of 124 days and is primarily removed via reaction with OH (Montzka et al., 2011). CHBr<sub>3</sub> is photolysed within 24 days therefore an increasing CH<sub>2</sub>Br<sub>2</sub>/CHBr<sub>3</sub> ratio suggests ageing of the air mass, if the emissions are co-located and the emission ratio...
remains constant. The southerly and African air masses, plus some trade wind trajectories from Europe contain relatively aged emissions.

The mean mixing ratios of CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ of 1.01 pptv and 1.08 pptv are within the range of previous, ship based measurements in the area. Higher mean mixing ratios of 2.4 pptv for CH$_2$Br$_2$ and 6.2 pptv for CHBr$_3$ (Quack et al., 2007a) were observed in spring 2005 and lower mean mixing ratios of 0.4 pptv for CH$_2$Br$_2$ and 1.1 pptv for CHBr$_3$ (Carpenter et al., 2009) during summer 2007. Over the open ocean CHBr$_3$ surface concentrations are generally higher than CH$_2$Br$_2$ (Butler et al., 2007; Kurihara et al., 2010). However, throughout the flights, background levels of CH$_2$Br$_2$ were generally higher than CHBr$_3$. This can be explained by considering the altitude at which the TROMPEX samples were taken (500–3000m) and from the shorter lifetime of CHBr$_3$ compared to CH$_2$Br$_2$ indicating an aged background air mass. Unlike the iodocarbons, the brominated species did not show a clear latitudinal dependence.

4.4 Summary

The Mauritanian upwelling was confirmed as a significant regional source of CHBr$_3$, CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHCl$_3$, C$_2$H$_5$I and CH$_2$ICl to the MBL. However, mixing ratios over the upwelling were similar to if not slightly lower than observed in coastal regions (e.g. Carpenter et al. (1999); Quack and Wallace (2003)) which cover a much larger total surface area, implying that coastal upwelling systems in themselves are not strong global sources of VSLH (Carpenter et al., 2009).

Ratios of CH$_2$Br$_2$/CHBr$_3$ revealed distinct clusters of data which correspond to different air mass origins, with the lowest ratios corresponding to fresh emission from the upwelling region. The ubiquitous presence of CH$_2$ICl over the open ocean shows that it must have an open ocean source. Although concentrations measured were very low, CH$_2$ICl has an extremely short lifetime and is an important source of reactive iodine to the MBL (Jones et al., 2010).

Concentrations of all measured halocarbons were elevated with increasing proximity to the oceanic upwelling observed along the coast of Mauritania. The collected data provided distinct, vertical profiles highlighting the rapid, photolytic degradation of these compounds.
within the tropical troposphere, with the shortest lived halocarbon concentrations reduced by 50% within the boundary layer. Iodocarbons showed a latitudinal dependence with concentrations increasing with decreasing latitude similarly to SST, in line with previous flux measurements of CH$_2$ICl in the same region. Greater iodocarbon emissions would result in an overall increase in tropospheric ozone destruction towards the equator.
Chapter 5

VSLH in the tropical Pacific Ocean

This chapter discusses results from the TORERO campaign (Tropical Ocean tRoposphere Exchange of Reactive halogen species and Oxygenated VOC) in the East Tropical Pacific (ETP). This was a large, multi-platform campaign involving measurements aboard the NOAA ship Kaimimoana, R/V Hakuho-Maru and the NSF/NCAR Gulfstream V aircraft. The R/V Hakuho-Maru was part of a study called EqPOS (Equatorial Pacific Ocean and stratospheric/tropospheric atmosphere Study) but the complementary measurements were incorporated into TORERO.

The scientific objective of the TORERO campaign was to study the release, transport and fate of reactive halogen gases and oxidized VOCs, and their effect on the atmospheric oxidation capacity.
Chapter 5: VSLH in the tropical Pacific Ocean

Figure 5.1 – NOAA ship Kaimimoana in dock at Pearl harbour for mobilisation before TORERO.

5.1 The East Tropical Pacific

As discussed in section 1.4.9, quantifying short-lived organic halogen sources in the tropics is of particular importance as deep convection in this region can rapidly transport reactive halogen species into the free troposphere and even as high as the stratosphere. Measurements in the tropical Pacific are sparse, especially the eastern tropical Pacific ocean (figure 5.2), defined as a 28 million km$^2$ box from the coast of America to 140°W between the Tropic of Cancer and the Tropic of Capricorn. This area accounts for approximately 10% of the global oceanic primary production (Pennington et al., 2006). This region is also where the net radiation balance is positive meaning there is more incoming energy than outgoing.

Normal East Pacific Ocean temperatures vary between 20 and 32°C with the coldest waters at the higher latitudes and the Equatorial Cold Tongue. The Californian Current and North Equatorial Current bring cooler water down from the North Pacific, driven by the trade winds along the coast of California. The Cold tongue is driven by the opposing cell with southerly winds pushing the Peru Current. These subtropical gyres rotate clockwise and counter clock-wise, respectively driving warm water westward. This pooling of warm water in the Western Pacific increases sea level by 30–50 cm and deepens the thermocline compared to the coast of Peru (Pennington et al., 2006). This thermocline imbalance across the Pacific results in enhanced nutrient supply to the eastern Pacific
5.1 The East Tropical Pacific

euphotic zone.

These counter-rotating cells cause large scale vertical movement when coupled with the Coriolis force. This, combined with wind-driven upwelling along the equator, results in a constant supply of nutrients to the surface from the coast of Ecuador extending out along the equator. The trade winds also drive upwelling and thus a temperature minima on the west coast of the Galapagos Islands.

The warmest water of the east tropical Pacific resides in the Central Pacific southern hemisphere and eastern Pacific warm pool. The large net solar irradiance and weak, wind driven ocean mixing at the warm pool results in surface temperatures exceeding 30°C (Wang and Enfield, 2001). The Costa Rica Dome is an area of oceanic upwelling where the thermocline ascends to near the surface bringing cold water and nutrients (figure 5.2, Fiedler and Talley (2006)).

The equatorial cold tongue is centered directly on the equator west of 120°W, and slightly south of the equator to the east. Surface water properties here ''are determined by seasonal advection of cooler water from the Peru Current and by equatorial upwelling'' (Wyrtki, 1966, 1981). Temperature of the cold tongue decreases towards the east as progressively cooler waters are upwelled from the Equatorial Undercurrent that shoals as it flows from west to east (Kessler, 2006; Sloyan et al., 2003). Note that the cold tongue never looks like the mean of Fig. 3 a, nor is all variability accounted for by the seasonal and ENSO (El Niño-Southern Oscillation, see Appendix) patterns of Figs. 3 b and c; tropical instability waves markedly distort the fronts along the northern and southern edges so that the ''tongue'' looks more like an ''auger'' (Willett et al., 2006). The cold tongue seasonal amplitude is ±1–3°C, with coldest temperatures in September–October. Eastern boundary current waters are marked by thermal fronts where they reach the eastern Pacific warm pool off Ecuador and the southern end of Baja California. These waters have high seasonal amplitudes of surface temperature (±>3°C). The semiannual harmonic makes only a small contribution to the seasonal cycle of surface temperature – the semiannual amplitude is 0.1–0.3 times the annual amplitude – except near the thermal equator (not shown). Surface temperature variability associated with ENSO is highest (±1–2°C) along the equator and in eastern boundary current waters, and lowest in the warm pool. High-frequency variability associated with equatorial and coastal Kelvin waves during El Niño events is not resolved by the ENSO component of our analysis.

Smaller-scale patterns of mean surface temperature are also related to important oceanographic processes. The local minimum at 9°N, 89°W marks the Costa Rica Dome, an oceanic upwelling center where the thermocline ascends to very near the sea surface (see Fig. 9). The dome is associated with the terminus of the equatorial current system (Wyrtki, 1964a; Fiedler, 2002; Kessler, 2006) and is influenced by mesoscale coastal eddies (Willett et al., 2006). Surface temperature minima extending off the coast from the Gulfs of Tehuantepec, Papagayo, and Panama are associated with seasonal wind jets (Willett et al., 2006). The temperature minimum on the west side of the Galapagos is due to upwelling of Equatorial Undercurrent water (Kessler, 2006).

**Figure 5.2** – Diagram of the East Tropical Pacific (ETP). STSW, Sub Tropical Surface Water; TSW, Tropical Surface Water; ESW, Equatorial Surface Water. Contours represent sea surface temperature. Reproduced from Fiedler et al. 2006.

As the Pacific is such a vast water mass, temperature anomalies can impact weather on a large spatial scale. Yearly sea surface temperature (SST) deviations from a 30 year mean are called La Niña and El Niño events. During periods of La Niña, the cold tongue

159
extends further to the west and water temperatures drop by around 1°C (NOAA, ENSO monitoring). For periods of El Niño, temperatures increase by around the same amount and the cold tongue recedes and is often not visible.

La Niña and El Niño temperature deviations are measured from an array of sea buoys moored across the equator in grids called the TAO (Tropical Atmosphere Ocean project) array (Carpenter et al., 2011).

5.1.1 Motivation for measurements of halogens in the East Tropical Pacific (ETP)

Recently, IO column density has been retrieved using differential optical absorption spectroscopy (DOAS) from the SCIAMACHY satellite (figure 5.3, Schonhardt et al. 2008). From these satellite images there appears to be enhanced IO above the Peruvian upwelling region. It has been hypothesised that short-lived iodocarbons could contribute to MBL IO and the TORERO cruise aimed to test this theory. Mahajan et al. (2012) state that the IO above the Peruvian upwelling could be consistent with the biological production of iodine containing species due to high Chl-a content in the upwelling region but this has not been validated with measurements. Mahajan et al. (2012) also measured IO differential slant column densities as high as $4.9 \times 10^{13}$ molecules cm$^{-2}$ in the ETP. This corresponds to $>1$ ppt of reactive iodine IO$_x$ in the MBL. However, DOAS measurements made by the GV aircraft during TORERO indicated that the majority of IO was present in the free troposphere (Dix et al., 2013).

It should be noted that the satellite retrievals are not a confirmed measurement of IO in this region and this is made clear in the publication by Schönhardt et al. (2008). The technique utilises Differential Optical Absorption Spectroscopy (DOAS) where the sensitivity is dependent upon incident light intensity. The greater the Earths surface spectral reflectance, the greater the sensitivity. This results in less noise and better signal above polar regions which are covered in highly reflective ice and also benefit from a greater number of data points as the satellites orbit. IO and BrO data from above Antarctica compares well to ground based Long Path DOAS (LP-DOAS) measurements from Halley Station (Saiz-Lopez et al., 2007b).
Figure 5.3 – Iodine oxide slant columns retrieved from SCIAMACHY (Sept-Nov 2005), reproduced from Schonhardt et al. 2008.

In contrast to ice and snow, the sea surface is less reflective and scatters reflected light. At the ITCZ, persistent convection results in semi-permanent cloud cover which is highly reflective. In the ETP specifically the ocean is very calm, also known as the doldrums and consequently has greater reflectivity. Because these IO measurements in the ETP are very close to the LOD due to a poor signal-to-noise ratio it is not inconceivable that a baseline zero error exists and that these measurements reflect physical parameters rather than IO concentrations. Longer term averages are currently being processed which may help to strengthen this data with respect to the ETP region.

5.2 Experimental

From 27th Jan until 28th Feb 2012, the NOAA research vessel Kaimimoana sailed from Pearl Harbour, Hawaii to Puntarenas, Costa Rica via the 95°W and 110°W TOA buoy lines.

Very short-lived halocarbons (VSLH) were quantified in air and water samples taken at...
regular intervals along the ships track (figure 5.4). Air samples were measured at a frequency of one every 20 minutes, near continuously throughout the voyage resulting in over 1800 data points. Surface seawater samples were taken from the ships seawater inlet at a frequency of one every 55 minutes and at various depths from conductivity, temperature, depth (CTD) casts at specific points during the voyage.

**Figure 5.4** – TORERO cruise track split into three sections highlighting specific sampling regions. A, longitudinal transect at constant speed allows characterisation of diurnal cycles; B, CTD latitudinal cross-section; C, Eastern Pacific warm pool region.

Meteorological measurements made from the top of a 10 m bow tower included wind speed, wind direction, pressure and humidity. Sea surface temperature (SST) was measured using a ‘sea snake’— a temperature probe which is allowed to drag just below the water surface. Seawater salinity was measured from the conductivity of water sampled from the seawater inlet.
Figure 5.5 – Technical drawing of NOAA vessel Ka'imimoana “Ocean Explorer” showing position of instrumentation and sample lines during the TORERO campaign.
5.2.1 Aircraft overpasses

As part of the TORERO campaign the cruise path of the Kaimimoana was intersected by the flight path of the NSF/NCAR GV research aircraft (figure 5.6) which was fitted with the TOGA GC-MS (Trace Organic Gas Analyser) and operated by NCAR (Apel et al., 2003). The instrument was somewhat similar to the GC-MS used on-board the KA with an Agilent 5975 MSD at its heart. The differences are the resistively heated column and the sample pre-concentration which utilises liquid nitrogen to cryogenically focus analytes rather than an absorbent trap. The cryogenically focussed peaks give increased sensitivity and allow for extremely rapid chromatography. However the sample volume is limited which results in a higher LOD than can be detected on the ship-borne GC-MS which pre-concentrates 1 L of sample.

The GV overpassed the KA as low as 100 ft which allowed for comparison of measured VSLH. The GV intersected the KA on five occasions at the end of the cruise track section B and section C during 4 flights shown in figure 5.7. The TOGA GC-MS aboard the aircraft was inter-calibrated with the GC-MS aboard the KA (section 3.4.2).

5.2.2 In-vivo chlorophyll-a

Phytoplankton are a known source of VSLH and are hypothesised to be the dominant source of VSLH in open ocean regions. Phytoplankton abundance can be estimated from chl-a concentration. Chlorophyll-a (Chl-a) fluorescence was measured in-situ using a Turner C6 Multi-Sensor Platform with an installed in-vivo chlorophyll Cyclops-7 sensor. This sensor provides an excitation wavelength of 440 nm which is absorbed by
the chl-a and subsequently fluoresces at 680 nm. The fluorescence is measured and is proportional to chl-a concentration.

This instrument has a LOD of 0.025 µg L\(^{-1}\) and dynamic range of 0–500 µg L\(^{-1}\). It also has an in-built temperature sensor with a range of -2 to 50°C.

Factors affecting phytoplankton estimates using \textit{in-vivo} fluorescence measurements of Chl-a are two-fold.

Firstly, the assumption that Chl-a is directly proportional to phytoplankton must be tested. Phytoplankton is a very broad term for a huge range of biological species. Different phytoplankton functional types will contain different concentrations of Chl-a.

Secondly, the fluorescence measurement of chl-a itself presents a number of significant problems (Falkowski and Kiefer, 1985):

1. Senescent phytoplankton cells will produce a greater per-unit fluorescence than healthy phytoplankton
Phytoplankton are a known source of VSLH and are hypothesised to be the dominant source of VSLH in open ocean regions (REF). Phytoplankton abundance can be estimated from chlorophyll-a (Chl-a) concentration.

Chl-a fluorescence was measured in-situ using a Turner C6 Multi-Sensor Platform with an installed *in-vivo* chlorophyll Cyclops-7 sensor. This sensor provides an excitation wavelength of 440 nm which is absorbed by the Chl-a and subsequently fluoresces at 680 nm. The fluorescence is measured and is proportional to chl-a concentration.

This instrument has a LOD of 0.025$\mu$g L$^{-1}$ and dynamic range of 0-500$\mu$g L$^{-1}$ (ref. http://www.turnerdesigns.com/products/submersible/c6-multi-sensor). It also has an in-built temperature sensor with a range of -2 to 50 degC.

Factors affecting phytoplankton estimates using *in-vivo* fluorescence measurements of Chl-a are two-fold. Firstly, the assumption that chl-a is directly proportional to phytoplankton must be tested. Phytoplankton is a very broad term for a huge range of biological species. Different phytoplankton functional types will contain different concentrations of chl-a.

For the reasons stated it is clear that care must be taken when interpreting Chl-a data and making links to phytoplankton and thus VSLH concentrations. Further, different phytoplankton function types may release differing ratios of VSLH. For example; a species which releases a large amount of VSLH may contain less Chl-a than a species which releases none and *vice-versa*. This makes the link between Chl-a and VSLH very indirect. However, Chl-a concentration remains the easiest and in most cases the only technique available to assess biological activity and can still provide useful data on the spatial distribution of ocean biology.

**Figure 5.8** – Left: Turner C6 fluorimeter flow-through module coupled to the AutoP&T. Right: C6 unit showing the multi-sensor head and rotating cleaning brushes.

2. Phytoplankton can adapt to light conditions. Therefore a phytoplankton species abundant in equatorial regions will fluoresce less than the same species at mid-latitudes.

3. Cell morphology can interfere with the cells fluorescence

4. Turbidity can cause scattering or absorb the fluoresced light

5. Phytoplankton response to sunlight is to temporarily reduce their *in-vivo* fluorescence per unit of extractable Chl-a as a means of dissipating excess energy
5.2 Experimental

Chl-a can also be mapped globally from satellite retrievals from MODIS (Moderate Resolution Imaging Spectroradiometer) aboard NASA’s Terra and AQUA satellites.

Figure 5.9 – Left: CTD cage fitted with Niskin canisters for the collection of seawater from various depths. Right: Night time CTD cast.

5.2.3 Conductivity, Temperature, Depth (CTD)

A ‘CTD’ is an instrument for measuring a depth profile of the ocean. It consists of a lead weighted, metal frame which is lowered into the ocean on a long cable up to 3000 m depth. The frame houses at least three instruments for the three basic measurements: Salinity from conductivity, temperature and depth from pressure. The frame can also house other instruments if required. During TORERO a fluorimeter was fitted for the \textit{in-vivo} excitation at 440 nm and subsequent fluorescence at 680 nm of chlorophyll-a. The CTD was also fitted with ‘Niskin’ bottles; PVC tubes with open ends which allow water to flow through the tube as it descends (figure 5.9). As the CTD ascends the open ends are capped at pre-determined depths allowing for the capture of water samples from a
range of ocean depths.

5.2.4 Instrumental setup

![Image of instrumental setup](image_url)

**Figure 5.10** – Instruments secured for sea on the ship: Left, the air sampling TD-GC-MS. Right, the water sampling AutoP&T-TD-GC-MS.

5.2.4.1 Air sampling

Air was sampled from the top of the 10 m bow tower through a 60 m sampling line (1/2" PFA, Swagelok). A diaphragm pump (KNF, NO35.1.2AN.18) was used to pull ~30 L/min down the line. At 1 m before the diaphragm pump a T-union connected approximately 50 cm of 1/4" heated instrument grade stainless steel line (Restek) to a metal bellows pump (Senior Aerospace MB-158) which provided 10 psi of positive pressure to the instrument with a pressure relief valve protecting the integrity of the bellows whilst the flow through the instrument was stopped. U-bends and drain plugs were added in-line to allow any water to be removed from the system. Additionally, the metal bellows pump was mounted
5.2 Experimental

upside down in a stand to prevent water from collecting in the bellows. An ozone analyser (Thermo Scientific Model 49i) drawing 3 L min$^{-1}$ was also connected before the diaphragm pump (figure 5.12). The metal bellows pump was connected to the air sampling instrument with approximately 1.5 m of 1/8" heated instrument grade stainless steel. The air sample flow was also diverted to the water measurement instrument in the wet lab using the same steel line but unheated.

![Figure 5.11 – Air sampling inlet secured at top of bow tower 10 m above sea level and adjacent to sonic wind measurement for flux calculation.](image)

The air samples, calibration gas and $n$5 nitrogen streams were selected (Markes, CIA8) and pre-concentrated on a cooled absorbent trap at -30°C (Markes, Unity2). Samples of 1 L in total (10 min, 100 mL min$^{-1}$) were pre-concentrated then desorbed at 300°C onto a gas chromatograph (Agilent 7890) and separated on a capillary column (Restek, RTX502.2, 30 m, 0.25 mm ID, 1.25 micron) using an oven temperature ramp (40-250°C, 3 min hold,
20°C min⁻¹ ramp). Eluents were ionized using electron ionization and analysed by m/z (Agilent, 5975C). CH₃I was quantified using the CH₃I⁺ ion (m/z 142) with I⁺ (m/z 127) as a qualifier ion. CH₂I₂Cl, CH₂I₂, CHCl₃, CCl₄, CHBrCl, CHBrCl₂, CHBr₂Cl, CH₂Br₂ and CHBr₃ responses were measured using m/z 176/178, 268/254, 83/85, 117/119, 128/130, 83/85, 129/127, 174/176 and 173/171 as quantification/qualification ions respectively.

**Figure 5.12** – Air sampling schematic showing air sample flow path. Blue lines, un-heated PFA; red lines, heated instrument grade stainless steel. The water instrument used air samples for sensitivity adjustment.

### 5.2.4.2 Water sampling

**Niskin bottle samples from CTD casts**

Water was taken from the Niskin bottles immediately after completion of the CTD profile. Water from each depth was sampled into amberised glass bottles which were rinsed with the sample water 4 times before being filled. Each sample was then filtered through a 0.45 µm Millipore filter using a glass gas syringe, the filter was changed for each sample. The syringe and filter were pre-rinsed with the sample water. The filtered water was then used to rinse a second amberised glass bottle reserved specifically for each depth. This
was performed before the bottle was filled with the filtered water to be analysed. The effectiveness of the sampling steps can be seen by comparing the 3 m CTD depth with the previous online surface water measurement and by the reproducibility of bottle samples (table 2.6.5.2, section 2.4). This validates the offline sampling and shows that there are negligible VSLH losses when the sample is stored in a Niskin bottle, filtered and stored in an amberised glass bottle before being analysed using the offline method. The CTD samples were introduced into the AutoP&T by switching the flow of the peristaltic pump to sample from the selected bottle sample (figure 5.13 (offline sample inlet)). The flow was switched 50 seconds prior to filling the purge tube with the final 20 seconds before filling with the flow path through the PTFE filter. The dead volume before the purge tube is approximately 5 mL and a 40 mL min$^{-1}$ flow rate was used to purge before filling which ensures that the water analysed is the water from the sample bottle.

Figure 5.13 – Schematic of water instrument setup showing the connection of the Auto-P&T to the ship surface seawater inlet.

Online sampling from bow water inlet

Water was pumped from an inlet approx. 2–4 meters (depending on sea-state) below the water-line at the bow of the ship (figure 5.5) and through a vortex de-bubbler (Seabird).
to remove any air bubbles (figure 5.13). The flow was maintained at around 10 L min$^{-1}$ through 1/2” PFA tubing and into a Turner C6 fluorimeter. Before entering the Turner C6 a peristaltic pump was used to divert a portion of the water to the AutoP&T system. The flow rate inside the AutoP&T (40 mL min$^{-1}$) was sufficiently high and the dead-volume sufficiently low (<10 mL) to ensure that the sample was representative of the water at the high flow rate side of the system. Similarly, the high flow rate of water before being diverted to the AutoP&T ensures the water reaching the instrument is representative of the water body in which the ship resides at that time.

GPS, Chl-a and meteorological data was then available on the same temporal frequency as the AutoP&T sample collection. The flow of water through the system was maintained at all times throughout the voyage.

### 5.2.4.3 Instrument stability

Mass spectrometers suffer from sensitivity changes during normal operation (section 3.2.3.3). Measurements of air and water from on-board ships are in far from normal conditions. The platform is moving and subject to vibration and forces from breaking waves. Due to the nature of the sampling environment, air sampled has a high water content and purging seawater to remove volatiles produces extremely humid samples. Despite extensive steps to remove water before analysis, the humidity of samples still negatively impacts the mass spectrometer performance.

![Figure 5.14](image_url) – Timing diagram for Auto-P&T operation. Red bars represent actuation of valves. The blue, purple and green shaded areas relate to Thermal Desorption, AutoP&T and GC-MS operations, respectively.

In order to account for short-term sensitivity changes between calibrations the analytes
were ratioed to CCl₄ (section 3.2.3.2). This is very effective for air samples where the concentration of CCl₄ in the atmosphere is stable. However, the ocean is a net sink of CCl₄ and dissolved concentrations can vary. In order to monitor sensitivity drift on the water instrument during TORERO, 500 mL of air was sampled and analysed between each water sample. By measuring CCl₄ in the air the sensitivity changes of the instrument could be tracked. Running this air sample between each water sample also acted as a blank to prevent carryover between water analysis. As CCl₄ was quantitatively retained on the adsorbent trap at +20°C, this temperature was used to provide a relatively dry sample between each water sample to allow the system to recover.

The concentrations of all VSLH were quantified in these air samples, but should be treated with caution as the air sample line between the pumps and the water instrument was unheated and there may have been carryover from the prior water sample. The concentration of CCl₄ in water is very low and there was no carryover into the air sample, allowing it to be used for the sensitivity adjustment.

5.2.5 Back Trajectory Analysis

The date/time and GPS co-ordinates were recorded with each air sample taken, however due to the dynamic nature of the boundary layer it is important to also understand the air mass history.

The position and altitude of the air arriving at the sampling position was modelled along its backward-trajectory for 315 hours using NOAA’s Hybrid Single Particle Lagrangian Integrated Trajectory Model (HYSPLIT). This model uses archive meteorological data to calculate the trajectory of an air parcel as its moves through the atmosphere. This provides useful information on the history of the air that was sampled, such as its proximity to a potential source region, influence from certain terrain or contamination from anthropogenic emissions. Back-trajectory analysis was run at 12 hour intervals along the cruise track and is shown in figures 5.15 and 5.16.

For the first 3 days of the cruise the trajectories had not touched land, looping around and originating from the western Pacific. For section A of the cruise track no air parcel had been over land for at least 4 days.
understand the air mass history. The position and altitude of the air arriving at the sampling position was modelled along its backward-trajectory for 315 hours using NOAA’s Hybrid Single Particle Lagrangian Integrated Trajectory Model (HYSPLIT). This model uses archive meteorological data to calculate the trajectory of an air parcel as it moves through the atmosphere. This provides useful information on the history of the air that was sampled, such as its proximity to a potential source region, influence from certain terrain or contamination from anthropogenic emissions. Back-trajectory analysis was run at 12 hour intervals along the cruise track.

Figure 5.15 – NOAA HYSPLIT 315 hour backward trajectory models ran at 12 hour intervals for the duration of the cruise.

During section B the ship crossed beneath the ITCZ (3degN) and trajectories shifted accordingly to originate from the southern hemisphere. These trajectories never reached land, originating from the south Pacific and Antarctic. Some of the trajectories did pass within 200 miles of the Chilean coast which is a biologically active region of coastline. However, this was at least 9 days prior to arriving at the sampling position. As the ship headed north along the 95degW buoy line it passed within 200 miles of the Galapagos Islands. Due to upwelling around islands, this region is biologically productive (Feldman 1986) and is likely to be a source of VSLH similar to that of a productive coastal region. However, whilst passing through this region, trajectories originated from the south and approached from the west, completely by-passing any enhanced emissions.

Trajectories in cruise section C originated from the Caribbean and previously the North Atlantic Ocean, passing over Costa Rica 30-40 hours before sampling.

Trajectories overview: The majority of air mass sampled could be defined as open ocean and devoid of any enhanced emission sources. This provided a useful measure of background air concentrations for longer lived species and the potential for identification of open-ocean sources of short-lived species. Air masses with terrestrial origin/influence did not have any major interaction with biomass burning.

Figure 5.16 – Southern hemisphere NOAA HYSPLIT 315 hour backward trajectory models ran at 12 hour intervals for the duration of the cruise.
During section B the ship crossed beneath the ITCZ (3°N) and trajectories shifted accordingly to originate from the southern hemisphere. These trajectories never reached land, originating from the south Pacific and Antarctic. Some of the trajectories did pass within 200 miles of the Chilean coast which is a biologically active region of coastline. However, this was at least 9 days prior to arriving at the sampling position. As the ship headed north along the 95°W buoy line it passed within 200 miles of the Galapagos Islands. Due to upwelling around islands, this region is biologically productive (Feldman 1986) and is likely to be a source of VSLH similar to that of a productive coastal region. However, whilst passing through this region, trajectories originated from the south and approached from the west, completely by-passing any enhanced emissions.

Trajectories in cruise section C originated from the Caribbean and previously the North Atlantic Ocean, passing over Costa Rica 30-40 hours before sampling. The majority of air mass sampled could be defined as open ocean and devoid of any enhanced emission sources. This provided a useful measure of background air concentrations for longer lived species and the potential for identification of open-ocean sources of short-lived species. Air masses with terrestrial origin/influence did not have any major interaction with biomass burning regions but may have had coastal influence 4 days prior to arrival at the sampling position.

5.3 Results and Analysis

5.3.1 Thermohaline distribution

The physical conditions of the ocean and atmosphere must be understood in order to fully interpret the data. Salinity and temperature play a pivotal role in driving deep ocean currents and surface upwelling. Cold, nutrient rich, upwelled water prompts rapid biological growth.

5.3.1.1 Salinity

Salinity displayed a reduction between 0-10°N as the ship entered the north equatorial counter-current and eastern pacific warm pool. This reduction in salinity and presence of
Figure 5.17 – Surface salinity measurements throughout the cruise in practical salinity units (PSU) averaged to air sampling frequency (20 min).

Figure 5.18 – Mean annual ETP surface salinity from bottle, surface and CTD data in PSU. Inset: deviation from the mean during January-March period (Adapted from Fielder et al. 2006).
the ITCZ at this latitude indicates precipitation dominating over evaporation in this area. There was a marked salinity increase in the southern hemisphere corresponding to a lack of precipitation and notably warm air temperatures resulting in net evaporation. As the ship approached Costa Rica toward the end of the cruise, salinity dropped to $<30$ PSU which is likely due to the influence of rivers entering the coastal waters.

### 5.3.1.2 Temperature

![Air temperature graph](image)

**Figure 5.19** – Air temperature measurements throughout the cruise in °C averaged to air sampling frequency (20 min).

The air temperature increased as the ship sailed south east toward the equator. The largest diurnal cycle was measured in the southern hemisphere ($>\Delta5^\circ$C) with the daily range far exceeding the mean temperature range of an entire year (1–2°C) (Amador 2006). SST measurements from the ship (figure 5.20) agree well with yearly means for this area (figure 5.21) except for a reduction in the intensity of the cold tongue which is often reduced in January/February. SST did decrease at around 2°N, 110°W but showed an increase at the same latitude 95°W where wind trajectories looped around and approached from the west (figure 5.15). This area west of the Galapagos Islands is usually a cold-spot due to island enhanced upwelling. These unusual trajectories may have reduced the upwelling.
Figure 5.20 – Sea surface temperature (SST) measurements throughout the cruise in °C averaged to air sampling frequency (20 min).

Figure 5.21 – Mean annual ETP surface seawater temperature (SST) from bottle, surface, buoy and CTD data in °C. Inset: deviation from the mean during January-March period (Adapted from Fielder et al. 2006).
Figure 5.22 – 4 km resolution sea surface temperature (SST) retrieval from NASA MODIS Aqua satellite average for the month of February.
on the westward side which requires trajectories perpendicular to the west coast (section 5.2.5) and also could have reduced the influence of the Peru Current bringing cold water up from the south. This is confirmed by satellite retrieval from Modis Aqua averaged over February (figure 5.22) which shows very little evidence of a cold tongue or any upwelling at the Galapagos. The area around the Galapagos is usually 2–3°C higher than average from January to March (Fiedler and Talley, 2006) but here we observe in excess of 28°C, much warmer than usual and characteristic of very weak upwelling influence. As the ship approached Costa Rica the SST increased to the maximum of its range.

5.3.2 Ozone

![Ozone concentration graph](image)

**Figure 5.23** – Ozone concentration (ppb) measured by a Thermo Scientific Model 49i O$_3$ analyser (grey circles) with a 10 point average (blue line) temporally along the TORERO cruise track.

Ozone concentration at the beginning of the cruise was around 30–35 ppb, consistent with observations on Hawaii (Lin et al., 2014; Oltmans et al., 1998). This soon decreased as the ship sails away from, and up wind of the island to concentrations in-line with the open-ocean (∼20 ppb). There was a notable decrease when transitioning across the ITCZ into the southern hemisphere and remained very low (∼10 ppb) until the ship re-entered the Northern Hemisphere. The reason for the low ozone was likely due to very low NO resulting in net photochemical destruction, sea surface deposition and low net entrainment.
as reported during flights within the west tropical Pacific boundary layer (Singh et al., 1996).

5.3.3 Wind speed and direction

![Wind vectors map](image_url)

**Figure 5.24** – 12 hour average true wind vectors coloured and scaled to true wind speed (U, Knots).

The most prominent winds during TORERO were the westerlies during section A of the cruise track (figure 5.24). The wind stress curl exerted on the ocean surface produces mesoscale eddies which drive mixed layer circulation, bringing nutrients, biology and dissolved gases to the surface where the latter can flux into the gas phase. Toward the end of section A the ship encountered low-level jets from the intra-Americas before beginning the transect down the 110°W buoy line. The Southern Hemisphere trade winds were lower velocity than the Northern Hemisphere trade winds and the warm pool region (see section 5.1) displayed relatively low velocity winds typical of this area (Wang and Fielder 2006).
5.3.3.1 Mixed layer depth variability

As the concentrations of the very-short lived species in air are strongly linked to their concentration in the ocean, physical factors affecting surface ocean concentrations will directly influence the spatial distribution in the gas phase. One of these important physical factors is oceanic mixed layer depth.

![Figure 5.25](image)

**Figure 5.25** – Difference in mixed layer depths between 22°N, 150°W (The start of the cruise) and 10°N, 110°W (Top of TAO buoy line) reproduced from Fielder et al. 2006.

Mixed layer depth along the 110°W buoy line during TORERO was shallow and averaged around 60 m (section 5.4.1) which is comparable to literature data in the same region (figure 5.25). No CTDs were cast at the beginning of the cruise but literature data from 22°N, 150°W from the same source shows a deeper mixed layer depth which is due to lower sea-surface temperature, a shallower thermal gradient and a much less stratified halocline. A shallow mixed layer depth is usually associated with a supply of macronutrients (nitrate and phosphate) from cooler water beneath the thermocline (Pennington et al., 2006).
5.3 Results and Analysis

5.3.4 Nutrients

Within the TORERO study region, nutrient supply to the euphotic zone is controlled by the equatorial and the Peruvian upwellings. As discussed in section 1.3.3, upwelling supplies cold, nutrient rich water to the surface. Within the euphotic zone these nutrients can be utilised by phytoplankton to grow. The equatorial and upwelling regions of the ETP are enhanced in nutrients compared to the oligotrophic gyres to the north and south and the level of primary production is limited by the supply of the micronutrient, iron (Fiedler et al., 1991).

The ETP is notably deficient in iron (Chavez et al., 1996, and references therein) and leads to its classification as high nitrate-low chlorophyll (HNLC) waters. Addition of iron to this system results in increased primary production at a rapid rate and can be seen in the chl-a images of coastal regions (figure 5.29). The limited upwelling strength and low equatorial wind speeds encountered during TORERO likely result in both reduced upwelling of nutrients and less atmospheric transport of iron to the region.

5.3.5 Chlorophyll-a

![Figure 5.26](image)

**Figure 5.26** – Hourly averaged chlorophyll-a fluorescence measured using Turner C6 (blue line). Solar irradiance shown as red line, grey line denotes solar zenith angle.

Chlorophyll-a fluorescence displayed a negative correlation to solar irradiance with concentrations peaking at night and rapidly decreasing during the day. At first analysis this
could be attributed to the greater mixing of cold, nutrient rich water at night as surface water cools allowing phytoplankton to bloom. On closer inspection, the rate of concentration change is too fast for this cycle to be driven by production. It is more likely due to a physical factor such as the fluorescence by which the phytoplankton is being measured. Diurnal variations of in vivo fluorescence are well documented (Prézelin and Ley, 1980; Kiefer et al., 1989; Babin et al., 1996; Demmig-Adams et al., 1996; Maxwell and Johnson, 2000).

The cycle observed in TORERO can be explained by non-photochemical quenching. There are two processes which lead to reduced in-situ fluorescence; photochemical and non-photochemical quenching. Photochemical quenching is a rapid response to high solar irradiance where fluorescence is utilised by a cell to expel excess energy not required for photosynthesis. Non-photochemical quenching involves longer term (cells take hours to recover) photo-damage to reaction centres used for photosynthesis during exposure to high solar irradiance. Reaction centres become in-operant for photosynthetic and fluorescence processes causing a decrease in the fluorescence relative to solar irradiance (Dandonneau and Neveux, 1997).

The in-situ data compared well to satellite data from MODIS (figure 5.27). General trends...
5.3 Results and Analysis

Figure 5.28 – Chlorophyll-a retrieval from NASA MODIS Aqua satellite average for the month of February 2012 overlaid onto Google Earth globe projection.

were captured by both techniques and the satellite data displayed some of the diurnal, negative sunlight correlation cycle seen in the in-situ measurements. A comparison of chl-a measurements between ship collected samples and satellite retrievals by Pennington et al. showed very good agreement in non-coastal regions (Pennington et al., 2006). Unfortunately, Chl-a primary standards were not available for calibration of the in-situ data during TORERO. However, the satellite data appeared to be an accurate representation of chl-a variability throughout the cruise, hence it was used as the primary indicator of bulk phytoplankton activity during data comparisons.

Chl-a satellite retrievals display an image of low productivity in the east tropical pacific during the month of February 2012. Global maps (figure 5.28) show some Chl-a enhancement along the Gulf of California and up around the western North American coast plus moderate concentration levels down the Peruvian and Chilean coast.

Higher resolution images (figure 5.29) highlight the Gulf of California, river outflows from Central America and Caribbean wind-jet driven coastal upwelling in regions such as the Gulf of Panama. The Peruvian and equatorial upwelling is very weak, displaying low
Figure 5.29 – 4 km resolution chlorophyll-a retrieval from NASA MODIS Aqua satellite average for the month of February 2012.
5.3 Results and Analysis

concentrations of chl-a, in-line with the observations of low wind speeds (figure 5.24), a weak cold tongue and warm surface ocean temperatures (figure 5.22).

5.3.6 VSLH in surface seawater and air

During the first few days of the campaign, concentrations of most VSLH were relatively high, especially the longer lived species such as $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$ and $\text{CHCl}_3$ ($\sim$1.1 and 11 pptv, respectively) which may indicate some coastal, island influence from Hawaii. $\text{CHBr}_3$ was relatively low ($\sim$1 pptv), in-line with low Chl-a fluorescence.

$\text{CHCl}_3$, $\text{CH}_2\text{BrCl}$, $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$, $\text{CHBr}_3$, $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$, $\text{CH}_2\text{ICl}$ and $\text{CH}_2\text{I}_2$ all displayed significant temporal and spatial variation throughout the campaign. $\text{CH}_2\text{BrCl}$ and $\text{CHBrCl}_2$ remained fairly constant, although the latter had a positive diurnal cycle (section 6.5.3). For the majority of gases, the measured surface seawater concentrations were positively correlated with air concentrations which is expected for localised oceanic emissions of VSLH (figure 5.30).

The only literature data available for the ETP is from the Blast I cruise in 1994 (Lobert and Elkins, 1996; Butler et al., 2007). Concentrations of $\text{CHBr}_3$ during TORERO were slightly higher, around 1–3 pptv compared to 0.5–2 pptv and showed a greater equatorial enhancement than during Blast I. $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$ measurements during Blast I were consistent with TORERO and displayed a very similar NH/SH gradient with the Blast I measurements which extended further south to 50°S. Measurements of $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$ again were in very good agreement between datasets with concentrations ranges for both cruises between 0.5 and 2 pptv. Neither cruise saw any equatorial or latitudinal gradient and the Blast I data showed concentration peaks above 20°N and below 20°S, which could indicate a correlation with SST or solar irradiance due to less cloud cover.

Air concentrations during TORERO were at the high end of measurement means, averaged globally of $\sim$1.1, 1.1 and 0.8 pptv for $\text{CHBr}_3$, $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$ and $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$, respectively (Ziska et al., 2013). Water concentrations also fit into the range of previous measurements for $\text{CHBr}_3$ but were around 1 pmol dm$^{-3}$ less for $\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2$ (1–2 vs. $\sim$3) and up to 2 pmol dm$^{-3}$ less for $\text{CH}_3\text{I}$ (1–2 vs. $\sim$4).
Figure 5.30 – Continued over...
Figure 5.30 – Concentrations of VSLH in the air (blue) and surface seawater (red) during TORERO. Bottom right shows CH$_2$ICl in air (red), CH$_2$I$_2$ in air (black) and CH$_2$I$_2$ in water (blue) during section A of the cruise.
5.3.6.1 Iodocarbons

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{I} \]

Figure 5.31 – CH\(_3\)I mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

CH\(_3\)I can be formed in the surface ocean (see section 1.5.3.1) and has been positively correlated with sea surface temperature (Yokouchi et al., 2001). CH\(_3\)I was detected almost ubiquitously in the ETP during TORERO (figure 5.31) although it did not show a strong correlation with SST. The first leg of the cruise displayed the lowest SST and a moderately high CH\(_3\)I concentration which dropped around 120°W despite an increase in SST. Cooler temperatures west of the Galapagos islands did result in a drop in CH\(_3\)I and concentration increased to its highest close to the warm pool but this could have been influenced by coastal upwelling, river outflow or the Costa Rica dome which result in the enhanced Chl-a that can be seen in the grey scaled MODIS satellite data in figure 5.31.

Back trajectories show that air sampled during the cruise has only passed over open ocean regions and has not had any coastal or terrestrial influence for at least 30 hours for section C which was the sampling region closest to land. As CH\(_2\)I\(_2\) and CH\(_2\)ICl have lifetimes of <5 minutes and 2.5 hours, respectively (Montzka et al., 2011), these species are likely to have been emitted from the ocean. CH\(_2\)ICl showed evidence of an open ocean source, possibly from phytoplankton (figure 5.32). CH\(_2\)ICl was observed at elevated concentrations...
5.3 Results and Analysis

Figure 5.32 – CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

in the open ocean in a previous research cruise (Moore and Tokarczyk 1993) and during the TROMPEX flights (Andrews et al. 2013, see chapter 4). Wind speed appeared to be driving the air and water concentrations with high wind speed resulting in greater flux and more mixing of the surface ocean resulting in higher CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ concentrations (figure 5.30, bottom right). Open ocean air concentrations of CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ were very low peaking at 0.25 pptv and 0.08 pptv, respectively with minima below the limit of detection. Due to the improving sensitivity of instrumentation, previous measurements may not have observed these low levels, with measurable concentrations encountered only at coastal or upwelling regions. Although the concentrations are small they could represent a widespread release over a very large area of ocean which could be significant to the MBL globally.

A modelling study of iodocarbons by Ordóñez et al. (2012) estimated a 2.5 fold greater flux from coastal to open ocean which was found to underestimate CH$_2$IBr. Increasing the flux by 5 fold, brought modelled values into line with observations but led to an over-estimation of CH$_2$ICl. This could be due to unaccounted for CH$_2$ICl flux in the open ocean as observed in this study. CH$_2$IBr was not detected in the open ocean measurements of
TORERO despite the instrument having a theoretical LOD of 0.04 pptv for this compound (see section 2.5.2.1, table 2.1).

Figure 5.33 – CH$_2$I$_2$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

There is increasing evidence that disconnect exists between the iodocarbons and bromocarbons in the open ocean compared to coastal regions. One possibility is a difference in phytoplankton species present in open ocean regions that are a source of iodocarbons. There is evidence that in the ETP eutrophic coastal areas, large phytoplankton cells dominate and in the open ocean small cells are dominant (Pennington et al., 2006). Further study of iodocarbons should be accompanied by a much more comprehensive analysis of ocean biology and nutrient supply.

5.3.6.2 Chloro/Bromocarbons

Chloroform concentrations were highest at the start of the cruise close to Hawaii and were greater in magnitude in the Northern Hemisphere, displaying a distinct shift as the ship crossed the ITCZ. As chloroform has a lifetime of approximately 149 days (Montzka et al., 2011) the high concentrations at higher latitude could be an anthropogenic influence from
5.3 Results and Analysis

Figure 5.34 – CHCl$_3$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

North America. Wind speeds were highest between 140 and 120°W which would transport fresh terrestrial or coastal emissions from Mexico, however concentrations do not reflect this and perhaps the high concentrations at the beginning of the cruise were more heavily influenced by oceanic emissions, although Chl-a does not provide a link between emissions and ocean biology.

The bromochlorocarbons displayed less variation than the other VSLH with CH$_2$BrCl concentrations in water and air hardly changing throughout the cruise (figure 5.35). CHBrCl$_2$ displayed a diurnal cycle small in magnitude with average concentration remaining relatively constant; this is discussed further in section 6.5.3. CHBr$_2$Cl had a larger range with higher concentrations observed from air trajectories originating from Mexico and Central America. It also showed a Northern-Southern Hemisphere concentration gradient similar to CH$_2$Br$_2$.

CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ are the largest contributors to MBL bromine of all the VLSH. CH$_2$Br$_2$ is relatively long lived (123 days, Montzka et al. (2011)) and shows influence from coastal upwelling and areas or high Chl-a upwind of the sampling site. These are most noticeable
Figure 5.35 – CH$_2$BrCl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

Figure 5.36 – CHBrCl$_2$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.
5.3 Results and Analysis

Figure 5.37 – CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

Figure 5.38 – CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.
Figure 5.39 – CHBr$_3$ mixing ratios in air overlaid on grey scaled MODIS Chl-a.

during periods of high wind or closer to the Costa Rican coast when transport times are faster. As the CH$_2$Br$_2$ sink is mainly OH (photolysis lifetime >5000 days, Montzka et al. (2011)), emissions are able to travel long distances. Due to lack of NO$_x$ and near constant convection at the ITCZ resulting in less entrainment of O$_3$ from the stratosphere, O$_3$ and thus OH concentrations are low in the TORERO study region. This would increase the local lifetime of CH$_2$Br$_2$.

CH$_2$Br$_2$ shows a distinct Northern-Southern Hemisphere concentration gradient at the ITCZ which is discussed in detail in section 6.5.2. Being shorter lived than CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_3$ displays less coastal influence and is likely more representative of the immediate ocean as back trajectories show that air parcels arriving at the cruise track were at least 4 days from land. Concentrations were greatest over the equator, which is consistent with previous datasets (Butler et al. 2007) but unusually the concentration drops off the west coast of the Galapagos Islands although this does correspond to the lowest wind speed regime encountered.

Figures 5.31–5.39 overlay VLSH onto Chl-a maps. In previous studies, MBL concentra-
Results and Analysis

Measurements have been directly compared with Chl-a in the ocean beneath the sampling site (O’Dowd et al., 2008; Carpenter et al., 2009). This approach often results in a good correlation for coastal or shelf regions of high productivity, however the boundary layer is very dynamic and air masses may not be representative of the position at which they were sampled. This is especially true of open-ocean measurements where background levels are low enough that influence from distant sources is significant. Arnold et al. 2010 used a Lagrangian transport model to determine the air mass history and calculate an age weighted Chl-a exposure value corresponding to each sampling position. This then takes into account the exposure each sampled air parcel has had to Chl-a along its back-trajectory, with a decreasing influence further back in time due to diffusion and atmospheric decay of the emitted species. This significantly increased the correlation of CH$_3$I, CHCl$_3$, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ data from the OOMPH (Organics over the Ocean Modifying Particles in both Hemispheres) research cruise to a satellite Chl-a retrieval (SEA-WiFS). This study highlights the importance of understanding the air mass history when interpreting measurements of biogenic emitted VSLH.

5.3.7 GV vertical profiles

During section C of the TORERO cruise the GV aircraft (section 5.2.1) overpassed the KA on five occasions. For RF13 (Research Flight 13) the GV flew past the ship at low altitude and then started a vertical ascent. The intercalibrated instruments on board each platform allowed for comparison of surface air concentrations and atmospheric profiles for CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_3$, CH$_3$I and CHCl$_3$ (figure 5.40). Although inter-comparison of CHBr$_3$ between the two instruments was quite good (section 3.4.2), the variation seen in figure 5.40 is similar to the differences between the calibration techniques.

CH$_3$I and CHBr$_3$ display a typical vertical profile for short-lived gases showing exponential decay with altitude. Methyl iodide displays a distinct vertical profile in line with surface emission with subsequent dilution and photolytic degradation validating its use as a tracer for marine convection (Bell et al., 2002a). The CHBr$_3$ vertical profile is in agreement with data from TROMPEX in the tropical Atlantic (see chapter 4). CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ display a more unusual pattern with an enhancement above 5000 ft. This could be due to transport from coastal or terrestrial regions and is compounded by the longer lifetimes of these species which allows them to accumulate.
Figure 5.40 – Vertical profiles from the GV TOGA instrument after an overpass of the KA during RF13. Open circles denote GV data and crosses denote KA air sample.
**Figure 5.41** – 315 hr backwards trajectory modelled using NOAA HYSPLIT, corresponding to the vertical profiles (figure 5.40). Red line has a 150 ft AMSL start point, blue line is 2500 ft, green line is 5000 ft and orange line is 10000 ft. The position of the ship during the overpass is marked as ‘KA’ and the direction of GV flight indicated by the arrow.
Figure 5.41 shows that the ITCZ moves further south with altitude and that a vertical profile starting at 100 m and ascending to over 10,000 m as tracked by the GV would result in sampling of multiple air mass origins throughout the climb. This could explain the enhancement above 5000 ft as air masses at higher altitudes have more Northern Hemisphere (NH) influence and have resided above the equatorial region for longer. This change in air mass origin from the Southern Hemisphere (SH) to the NH highlights the enhanced NH concentrations of CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHCl$_3$. The reason for such NH/SH gradient is unknown and discussed in detail in chapter 6.

5.3.8 Diurnal cycles

CH$_2$ICl displayed the most notable diurnal cycle in the air data with concentrations steadily increasing during the night and rapidly decreasing at sunrise due to photolysis. This diurnal was even present in the surface water samples, consistent with the fact that CH$_2$ICl is photochemically destroyed in seawater (Jones and Carpenter, 2005) (figure 5.42).

![Figure 5.42](image)

**Figure 5.42** – Time series of CH$_2$ICl mixing ratios in air (blue circles, black line is 5 point adjacent average) and short-wave irradiance (red line).

During TORERO, from the 27th January until 5th February, wind speeds were high (>10 m s$^{-1}$) and peak concentrations of CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ICl during the night reached their maximum measured during the campaign of 0.17 and 0.26 pptv, respectively. CH$_2$I$_2$ has an even shorter atmospheric lifetime than CH$_2$ICl and concentrations in the air were extremely low, dropping to below the LOD in the second half of the cruise. CH$_2$I$_2$ concentrations in
5.3 Results and Analysis

water displayed a diurnal cycle more prominent than for CH$_2$ICl with an extremely rapid decay at sunrise likely attributed to the photochemical reaction in seawater with Cl$^-$ to form CH$_2$ICl and I$^-$.  

Diurnal cycles were plotted for the entire TORERO dataset so that every data point taken within one specific hour of the day was averaged and plotted alongside measured solar irradiance (figure 5.43). This showed the rapid photolysis of CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ occurring at sunrise and also a positive correlation of CHBrCl$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ with solar irradiance. The latter, positive correlations are studied in more detail in section 6.5.3. The drawback with plotting the diurnal cycles in this manner is that the ship was a moving measurement platform and as it sailed east it passed through multiple time zones. Instead of plotting against time of day, solar zenith angle (SZA) was used. In order to distinguish between AM and PM, a 360$^\circ$ SZA was calculated along the cruise track with 0$^\circ$ representing the sun being directly overhead. Averaging VLSH concentrations into 10$^\circ$ bins gives a better representation of diurnal cycles throughout the cruise. As the previous method was hindered by changes in longitude, this method has the problem that the SZA changes with latitude. To address this, the data was separated into Northern and Southern Hemisphere (figures 5.44 and 5.45, respectively).

Figure 5.46 shows that the diurnal cycle for CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ is observed in water samples in addition to in air. This is the first time that a diurnal cycle for CH$_2$I$_2$ has been detected in surface seawater and as such has important implications for our understanding of iodocarbon and reactive iodine emissions into the MBL. The observation of such distinct diurnal cycles was made possible by the combination of the high sample throughput of the new automated purge and trap system and the homogeneous ocean region where the measurements were taken. The high sample throughput provided enough temporal resolution to capture the rapid photolysis at sunrise and the measurements in the oligotrophic ocean meant that multiple days of measurements were representative of physical processes rather than moving through areas of varying emissions as is often the case for coastal measurements.

A recent study by Ordóñez et al. (2012) assumed CH$_2$IX emissions followed a solar diurnal profile with peak emission in early afternoon and no emission at night, due to photosynthesis induced increased biological activity during the day. The modelled concentrations
Figure 5.43 – VSLH concentrations averaged per hour of a day (GMT) as blue circles with short-wave solar irradiance overlaid as red circles. Error bars represent plus/minus one standard error.
5.3 Results and Analysis

Figure 5.44 – Continued over...
Chapter 5: VSLH in the tropical Pacific Ocean

Figure 5.44 – VSLH concentrations in the NH averaged per 10° of 360° Solar Zenith Angle (SZA) as black circles with short-wave solar irradiance overlaid as red circles. Error bars represent plus/minus one standard error.

Figure 5.45 – Continued over...
Figure 5.45 – VSLH concentrations in the SH averaged per 10° of 360° Solar Zenith Angle (SZA) as black circles with short-wave solar irradiance overlaid as red circles. Error bars represent plus/minus one standard error.
of CH$_2$I$_2$ in air were largely underestimated compared to observations. The authors consequently increased the night-time emission to half that of the day which brought monthly average concentrations closer to observations. From the TORERO observations, the flux of CH$_2$I$_2$ during the night (see section 6.3.1) is far greater than that of the day. This is because the CH$_2$I$_2$ is rapidly photolysed within the surface seawater before it can transfer into the air resulting in very small emissions during the day. If measurements were taken closer to the coast or a strong source region then it is likely that daytime emission would occur. The photolysis of CH$_2$I$_2$ in the surface water still has implications for MBL iodine as it forms the product CH$_2$ICl. However, CH$_2$ICl is also photolytically degraded within the surface seawater though to a lesser extent than CH$_2$I$_2$. The TORERO dataset goes some way to understanding the shape of the diurnal emission profile which Ordóñez et al. (2012) emphasise is necessary in order to estimate the source strength of the shortest lived iodocarbons.

Figure 5.46 – Concentrations of iodocarbons in air (coloured by wind speed: blue is low, red is high) and water (black circles) for CH$_2$ICl (left) and CH$_2$I$_2$ (right).
5.4 VSLH in the ocean

Surface ocean measurements were taken at 50 minute intervals along section A of the cruise. Along the 110 and 95°W TOA buoy lines (section B), on-line water samples were interrupted by the sampling of depth profiles from CTD casts. Normal on-line water sampling was resumed in section C. Due to problems with chromatography and instrument sensitivity during section C, this data has been omitted. The likely cause of these problems is the insufficient removal of water from the gas phase of the sample by the Nafion driers and subsequent build-up within the thermal desorption unit. Normally, cutting a short length off the front of the GC column or baking out the MS at elevated temperatures helps alleviate problems with water. In this case this did not solve the issue as the water was trapped inside the TD rather than the GC-MS, thus a preventative solution such as better water removal is required. This led to the development of the FPSC ‘coldfinger’ water trap (section 2.4.4.1).

5.4.0.1 CTD cross-sections

CTD profiles were taken at each degree of latitude along the 110°W buoy line. For each profile, water was sampled at 3, 20, 40, 60 80 and 100 m depth and analysed for VSLH. Temperature, salinity and fluorescence were measured at high vertical resolution in-situ with instruments mounted to the CTD cage. By compiling all the depth profiles at each degree latitude along the 110°W buoy line a cross section of the ocean across the equator can be visualised (figure 5.47). For the high resolution CTD data, such as temperature, the cross sections are interpolated between each degree latitudinally. The VSLH data is also interpolated through the vertical depth profile.

The extent of mixing in the surface ocean is dependent upon the mixed layer depth (isothermal layer). The thermocline remained very well defined and stratified down the 110°W line with warm surface temperatures creating a stable and shallow mixed layer (Figure 5.47). The mixed layer depth deepened above the equator whilst below the equator the halocline becomes less stratified and the mixed layer depth shallower. The increased salinity at equatorial and sub-equatorial latitudes is characteristic of cooler, denser water being upwelled in this region. According to Pennington et al. (2006) the yearly average for this
Figure 5.47 – Temperature cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N, 110°W with the location of the cross section portrayed in map format.

Figure 5.48 – Salinity cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N, 110°W
region above the equator (0–10°N) is a wind induced down-welling of ≈ 2 m day⁻¹. Below the equator there is net wind induced upwelling and average salinity is greater throughout the water column.

![Chl-a fluorescence cross section](image)

**Figure 5.49** – Chl-a fluorescence cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N with solar irradiance (red line) depicting daylight and night-time casts.

Generally, the Chl-a maximum was between 30 and 60 m with the greatest concentration at the equator around 40 m depth. This is likely due to phytoplankton growth in nutrient rich water being upwelled with the greatest abundance of phytoplankton residing at a depth where solar penetration is sufficient for efficient photosynthesis yet temperatures are not so great as to inhibit growth. The increased Chl-a concentration at shallow depths at the equator and around 3°S compared to 2–5°N can be attributed to greater mixing and by the fluorescence behavior of Chl-a under different light conditions (discussed in section 5.3.5). This is evidenced by the anti-correlation of surface Chl-a fluorescence with shortwave irradiation shown at the top of figure 5.49.
5.4.1 Depth profiles

**Figure 5.50** – Reproduced from Butler et al. (2007). Literature CTD casts collected during the PHASE 1 cruise at the equator, around 150°W showing CHBr₃, CH₂Br₂ and CH₃I

CTD casts were comparable to literature data (figure 5.50) with respect to CH₂Br₂ and CHBr₃ although the mixed layer depth was higher with concentrations of Chl-a and VSLH peaking around 40–60 m. CH₃I also agreed with literature data, displaying a surface influence (figures 5.51 and 5.52). A one dimensional profile plot, such as in figure 5.52, is often used to represent CTD profiles and by displaying data in this way it is easy to correlate VSLH concentrations with physical or biological parameters. For example CHBr₃, CH₂Br₂ and even CH₂ICl show strong correlation to Chl-a fluorescence while CH₃I is strongly correlated to temperature. This is only true in the depth dimension shown and by adding in a second dimension, latitude; it becomes clear that these correlations are not quite clear-cut (figures 5.53, 5.54 and 5.55).
Figure 5.51 – Conductivity, temperature, depth (CTD) and fluorescence profiles for each degree between 5°N and 5°S along the 110°W TAO buoy line.
Figure 5.52 – Continued over...
5.4.1.1 Iodocarbon depth profiles

The iodocarbon cross sections show that CH$_2$I$_2$ (figure 5.53) is concentrated at a lower depth (60–80 m) than CH$_2$ICl, which displayed a maximum typically at around 40 m depth, rising to around 20 m at the equator. Both show a similar latitudinal distribution which suggests a similar source or production of CH$_2$ICl as a photochemical product of CH$_2$I$_2$, which encounters higher solar radiation as it is mixed upward. This is in keeping with literature observations of the direct photolysis of CH$_2$ICl to CH$_2$I$_2$ (Moore and Tokarczyk, 1992; Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994) in addition to iodine substitution by chlorine (Jones and Carpenter, 2005). CH$_2$I$_2$ concentrations, even at depth, are considerably lower than the concentrations of CH$_2$ICl in the overlying water. This could suggest either a biological contribution of CH$_2$ICl and/or the chlorination of CH$_2$I$_2$ still occurs at depths where solar radiation is strongly attenuated.
Varner et al. (2008) speculate that CH$_2$I$_2$ is the major source of CH$_2$ICl in surface water but a direct source of CH$_2$ICl from plankton or bacteria (Klick and Abrahamsson, 1992; Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994; Moore et al., 1996; Yamamoto et al., 2001; Amachi et al., 2005a,b) could also make a significant contribution. Surface waters were depleted in CH$_2$I$_2$ relative to 60 m depth highlighting its short photolytic lifetime. CH$_2$ICl has a longer photolytic lifetime and could be mixed to the surface although it too showed depletion in the top few meters of ocean. This in-situ photodissociation corroborates observations by Yamamoto et al. (2001) and Martino et al. (2005).

The CH$_2$I$_2$ maxima appeared to be deeper than the Chl-a maxima which could indicate that the biological species which produce CH$_2$I$_2$ are distributed differently to Chl-a or that CH$_2$I$_2$ is produced in the senescence (dying) phase of sinking phytoplankton (which are no longer fluorescing). Interestingly, the maximum CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ICl concentrations were measured at 5°N where the Chl-a maxima was at its lowest concentration, unlike the bromocarbons, chlorocarbons and even CH$_3$I which displayed a maxima at 3°S. Yamamoto et al. (2001) observed CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ICl which correlated well with Chl-a in depth profiles collected from the Bay of Bengal, although these were more coastal measurements compared to the open ocean measurements during TORERO.

Mahajan et al. (2012) reported a positive correlation between CH$_3$I and SST in the Eastern Pacific which suggested a non-biological mechanism for its production and noted a negative correlation with Chl-a. During TORERO, CH$_3$I displayed a much different distribution to the other iodocarbons with the highest concentrations generally being at the surface. This supports the theory of surface photochemical production from radical recombination (see section 1.5.3.1). CH$_3$I also displayed a maxima at 60 m depth at 3°S which correlates with a maxima for the bromocarbons and is a point of enhanced Chl-a. This could be due to biological production or to accumulation at the MLD without the large loss term from flux to the atmosphere that controls the surface concentrations.
Figure 5.53 – Iodocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N
5.4.1.2 Chloro/bromocarbon depth profiles

Despite their correlation in air and surface water (section 5.3.6), CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ showed noticeably different distributions in their depth profiles. This could be due to differences in their lifetimes or to a different distribution of their production sources. CHBr$_3$ and CH$_2$Br$_2$ are believed to have similar sources due to their linear correlation ratio which is often consistent in magnitude between regions (Butler et al., 2007). Hughes et al. (2013) showed that CH$_2$Br$_2$ can be formed from CHBr$_3$ in diatom cultures and that CH$_2$Br$_2$ was susceptible to bacterial breakdown. CHBr$_3$ was not broken down but bacteria did inhibit its production. The marine diatoms studied produced both CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ but the latter was restricted to the growth phase. This study suggests that differences in CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ distribution could be encountered, coinciding with different stages in the diatom life-cycle and/or bacterial influence. Ignoring minor differences, the chloro/bromocarbons, with the exception of CHBrCl$_2$, all show a similar pattern with a maxima at around 60 m at 3°S and although generally showing a similar trend to Chl-a, they all lack its large equatorial enhancement.
5.4 VSLH in the ocean

Figure 5.54 – Chloro/bromocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N
5.4.1.3 Chlorocarbon biological production

![Figure 5.55](image_url)

**Figure 5.55** – Chlorocarbon cross sections of the ocean between 5 and -5°N; left, CHCl₃; right, CCl₄.

CHCl₃ (figure 5.55, left) displayed a similar distribution to the chloro/bromocarbons (figure, 5.54) indicating a biological source in the ocean. CCl₄ had a distribution in agreement with the ocean being a sink but also shows an enhancement slightly shallower than the bromocarbons at 40 m depth at 3°S and at 20 m depth at 1°N (figure 5.55, right). This could indicate a small biological source or possibly a physical factor which causes the enhancements. For instance, less mixing at this co-ordinate could result in the accumulation of dissolved gases at this particular depth. Certainly salinity is higher at this point compared to the same depths north of the equator (figure 5.48). This would also apply to the chloro/bromocarbon species which have longer residence times in seawater than the iodocarbons (Yamamoto et al., 2001) and therefore their distributions could be attributed to ocean dynamics in addition to source distributions. Also, the older the water, the greater the CCl₄ concentration since the atmospheric mixing ratio would have been higher when it entered the ocean. Thus enhancements, such as at 100 m, could indicate upwelling of old water masses.
5.5 Summary

A comprehensive range of VSLH have been observed in air and seawater of the East Tropical Pacific, an area with very few previous measurements of these species. The fast temporal resolution of the data revealed rapid changes in concentrations both diurnally and over a relatively small geographical area.

Atmospheric mixing ratios were fairly comparable to BLAST I (Lobert and Elkins, 1996; Butler et al., 2007) the only previous cruise in the ETP region with a north–south transect rather than west–east as per TORERO. The data was at the high end of the range of global mean measurements (Ziska et al., 2013). Atmospheric concentrations of CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_3$ and CHCl$_3$ showed notable NH/SH gradients, and CHBr$_3$ showed a strong equatorial enhancement in air but not water concentrations. CHBr$_3$, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CH$_3$I showed some coastal influence as the ship neared Costa Rica. These features and possible explanations for them are discussed further in Chapter 6. The atmospheric concentrations at the surface were compared to aircraft measurements aboard the NSF/NCAR GV and were fairly comparable for most species at the lowest altitudes. Vertical profiles displayed greater concentrations for CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ at altitude in comparison to the surface. This was likely due to sampling different air masses at higher altitudes. The TORERO dataset provides no evidence for enhancements of CH$_3$I or other organic iodine compounds in the East Tropical Pacific compared to other oceanic regions (Jones et al., 2010; Chuck et al., 2005). Thus, the tentative suggestion of enhanced IO concentrations extending out across this region (Schönhardt et al., 2008) (figure 5.3) remains unexplained by currently understood atmospheric chemistry.

Surface seawater concentrations were in the range of previous measurements for CHBr$_3$ but CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CH$_3$I were slightly lower than global means published from the HalOcAt database (Ziska et al., 2013). Open ocean measurements of the shortest-lived species such as CH$_3$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ are very rare and their emissions and distributions are not well understood. During TORERO, we observed diurnal cycles in both surface seawater and air of these species for the first time, with concentrations in both cases peaking at night. These measurements provide a better understanding of the diurnal emission profile required in order to constrain iodocarbon source strengths. The observations are at odds with Ordóñez et al. (2012) who implemented a diurnal emission profile of iodocarbons
peaking at solar noon and with no night-time emissions into the global CAM-Chem model. Ordóñez et al. (2012) found that CH$_2$I$_2$ mixing ratios were underestimated due to rapid daytime photolysis, but were brought reasonably into line with measurements if night-time emissions were increased to half that of the day. In the TORERO data the night-time flux of CH$_2$I$_2$ was found to be 3–4 x the daytime flux (chapter 6, section 6.3.1). The TORERO data implies that emissions of CH$_2$I$_2$ may currently be underestimated and that if working from a top down approach, night-time atmospheric data should be used to calculate global emission estimates.

VSLH depth profiles from CTD casts were comparable to previous studies (Yamamoto et al., 2001; Butler et al., 2007; Quack et al., 2004) with concentration maxima for most species generally occurring within the euphotic zone at around 60 m and coinciding with the deep Chl-a maximum. CH$_3$I showed evidence of a surface source with concentrations decreasing with depth, validating the photochemical production mechanism proposed by (Moore and Zafiriou, 1994). Latitudinal cross-sections across the equator highlighted distinct differences between the iodocarbons and bromocarbons. These also revealed that although many VSLH appeared to share a similar depth profile to Chl-a in individual CTD casts, there were distinct differences in latitudinal distribution when the entire cross section was considered.
Chapter 6

Factors controlling the emission of VSLH

In this chapter the GeosChem model has been used as a tool to help interpret measurements from the TORERO and TROMPEX campaigns. GeosChem model data extractions and simulations were ran by Dene Bowdalo and Mat Evans at the University of York.

In order to model and predict atmospheric concentrations of VSLH and subsequent processes it is necessary to understand their production in the ocean, how ocean chemistry and dynamics influence their distribution in the water column, and their transition from sea to air. As discussed previously, the majority of VSLH emissions are ocean derived but the climatically important processes occur in the gas phase. In chapter 5, the production of VSLH in the east tropical Pacific ocean was discussed alongside measurements of atmospheric mixing ratios. In this chapter, VSLH distribution in the ocean mixed layer and subsequent flux from ocean to atmosphere are studied. The GeosChem model is utilised to better understand the processes occurring once VSLH enter the atmosphere and how these observations fit our understanding of the global VSLH budget.
6.1 Controls on VSLH oceanic production

VSLH is known to be produced in the ocean but the exact sources and their magnitude are still relatively undefined. Marine biota are a known source with the enzyme bromoperoxidase thought responsible for the production of bromocarbons (Hill and Manley, 2009; Lin and Manley, 2012; Manley and Barbero, 2001; Moore et al., 1996; Weyer et al., 1991). Biological influence can usually be seen in the analysis of CTD profiles, with dissolved VSLH concentrations peaking at or near to the Chl-a maximum (figures 5.51 & 5.52). However, many studies have not found a direct link between biological parameters and VSLH concentration, with little or weak correlations between surface water or air concentrations and surface Chl-a (Abrahamsson et al., 2004; Quack et al., 2007b). Kurihara et al. (2012) found no significant correlation between Chl-a and CHBrCl$_2$, CHBr$_2$Cl or CHBr$_3$ despite observing a positive correlation for Chl-a with isoprene ($r^2 = 0.5$). Palmer and Reason (2009) modelled CHBr$_3$ paramaterised by Chl-a, SST, salinity and wind with the resulting model calculations showing only weak correlations with measurements ($r^2 = 0.02–0.41$), highlighting our lack of understanding of the complex processes involved. However, Kurihara et al. (2010) observed that Chlorophyll-b and prasinoxanthin (a pigment found in phytoplankton) had a positive correlation with CH$_2$I$_2$ ($r^2 = 0.69$ and $r^2 = 0.71$, respectively) and CH$_2$ICl ($r^2 = 0.87$ and $r^2 = 0.77$, respectively).

Table 6.1 – Bulk correlations for all TORERO CTD casts along 110°W from 5°N to 5°S. VSLH$_{max}$ and Chl-a$_{max}$ defined as the concentration maxima during the depth profile, generally between 40–60 m (figure 5.51). Correlations mentioned in the text are shown in bold font.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>CH$_4$</th>
<th>CH$_2$Br$_2$</th>
<th>CHBr$_2$Cl</th>
<th>CHBr$_3$</th>
<th>CH$_2$ICl</th>
<th>CH$_2$I$_2$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VSLH$_{max}$ vs.</td>
<td>r$^2$</td>
<td>0.385008</td>
<td>0.00197</td>
<td>0.173888</td>
<td>0.168725</td>
<td>0.063109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chl-a$_{max}$</td>
<td>slope</td>
<td>3.653133</td>
<td>-1.64136</td>
<td>2.304532</td>
<td>90.06042</td>
<td>-6.11769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VSLH$_{surf}$ vs.</td>
<td>r$^2$</td>
<td>0.289168</td>
<td>0.125756</td>
<td>0.012863</td>
<td>0.180881</td>
<td>0.186934</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chl-a$_{surf}$</td>
<td>slope</td>
<td>3.04036</td>
<td>4.250944</td>
<td>0.569951</td>
<td>51.54385</td>
<td>2.334293</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VSLH$_{surf}$ vs.</td>
<td>r$^2$</td>
<td>0.426971</td>
<td>0.000675</td>
<td>0.012913</td>
<td>0.020801</td>
<td>0.260542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chl-a$_{surf}$</td>
<td>slope</td>
<td>5.35859</td>
<td>0.451697</td>
<td>-0.82829</td>
<td>25.35274</td>
<td>3.997165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VSLH$_{max}$ vs.</td>
<td>r$^2$</td>
<td>0.181644</td>
<td>0.483138</td>
<td>0.305061</td>
<td>0.695532</td>
<td>0.005078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VSLH$_{surf}$</td>
<td>slope</td>
<td>0.443805</td>
<td>2.14439</td>
<td>0.607404</td>
<td>1.508768</td>
<td>0.32141</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

222
By collecting profiles along one line of longitude (110°W) during the TORERO campaign, it becomes apparent that variability in Chl-a fluorescence does not explain the variability in water concentrations for most VSLH. A multitude of parameters were plotted against each other in an attempt to identify links between VSLH and Chl-a and is summarised in table 6.1, to which the following discussion refers. Plotting the maximum VSLH concentration ([VSLH$_{\text{max}}$]) against the maximum Chl-a concentration ([Chl-a$_{\text{max}}$]) for each degree latitude along the 110°W line suggests very little bulk correlation between these two parameters when not confined to one individual depth profile. This suggests that any biological production is either not well represented by Chl-a abundance, or that other processes exert strong controls over the steady state VSLH$_{aq}$ concentration. Either way, it seems that VSLH sea-air emissions cannot be parameterised as a simple function of Chl-a. As for Chl-a in isolation, [Chl-a$_{\text{max}}$] vs. [Chl-a$_{\text{surface}}$] gives an $r^2$ of 0.6. This may be expected to be stronger and highlights that even [Chl-a$_{\text{surface}}$] is not always representative of its concentration in the deep productive region. This is not due to photochemical quenching of the fluorescence response (section 5.3.5) as CTDs were mainly cast during the night (figure 5.49) and removing the daylight CTDs actually reduced the correlation ($r^2 = 0.46$).

CH$_3$I displays the best correlation between its concentration at deep maximum and [Chl-a$_{\text{max}}$] ($r^2 = 0.39$) which may be due to biological production but could also be explained by physical processes combined with photochemical production at the surface (section 6.2). Generally, increasing [Chl-a$_{\text{max}}$] does not correlate with an increase in [VSLH$_{\text{max}}$].

Interestingly, plotting VSLH concentration in the surface water (3 m, [VSLH$_{\text{surface}}$]) against [Chl-a$_{\text{max}}$] displays some correlation with increasing [Chl-a] resulting in increased CH$_2$I$_2$ at the surface ($r^2 = 0.39$). This is interesting as CH$_2$I$_2$, at its maximum in the depth profile, is not correlated with CH$_2$I$_2$ at the surface ($r^2 = 0.14$), likely due to photolytic degradation. CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_3$I at the surface display an improved correlation with [Chl-a$_{\text{surface}}$] ($r^2 = 0.51$ and 0.43, respectively), again with a positive slope. This relationship could be explained for CH$_2$I$_2$ via an indirect link with Chl-a. A higher Chl-a concentration is indicative of greater biomass in the water column and thus greater turbidity. This leads to greater light attenuation and would result in the shortest-lived species having comparatively longer lifetimes in that particular water mass. This would allow them to be mixed to the surface before being photolysed. For CH$_3$I, increased [Chl-a$_{\text{surface}}$] could
Figure 6.1 – Simplified schematic demonstrating how surface wind shear could create a negative slope in the correlation between the concentration of short-lived species at the surface and at depth.

be a link to the increased availability of DOM in the surface water for photochemically driven radical recombination from methyl radicals and iodine atoms.

Bromocarbon concentrations at the surface are positively correlated with those at the VSLH\(_{\text{max}}\) due to their relatively long lifetimes in the water column (Quack and Wallace, 2003), thus production at the VSLH\(_{\text{max}}\) results in greater surface concentrations (figure 6.2).

The shorter-lived iodocarbon’s surface concentrations would not be expected to correlate well with their concentrations at the VSLH\(_{\text{max}}\) due to their rapid photolysis in the water column, and are in fact negatively correlated (figure 6.3). When there are higher concentrations at the VSLH\(_{\text{max}}\), there are generally lower concentrations at the surface. This highlights the importance of ocean boundary layer mixing on the distribution throughout the water column. High surface concentrations would be expected under conditions of vigorous mixing if the main production occurred sub-surface, but this would reduce the average VSLH\(_{\text{max}}\) concentrations as they would be diluted with water from throughout the MLD (figure 6.1). Conversely, lower mixing allows accumulation at depths where photolytic degradation is slower and would result in a lower rate of transport of VSLH to the surface. This would increase the influence of surface VSLH photo-degradation and therefore this argument is in favour of a sub-surface production mechanism.
6.1 Controls on VSLH oceanic production

Figure 6.2 – CH$_2$Br$_2$, CHBr$_3$ and CHBr$_2$Cl concentrations at the ocean surface (pmol dm$^{-3}$) against their maximum concentration (pmol dm$^{-3}$) during the depth profile for each CTD.

Figure 6.3 – CH$_2$I$_2$Cl and CH$_2$I$_2$ surface ocean concentrations (pmol dm$^{-3}$) correlation with concentrations at their respective deep maxima.
Chapter 6: Factors controlling the emission of VSLH

Figure 6.4 – CH$_2$ICl vs. CH$_2$I$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ vs. CHBr$_2$Cl concentrations at their respective deep maxima (pmol dm$^{-3}$).

At the VSLH$_{\text{max}}$, CH$_2$I$_2$ concentration correlates well with CH$_2$ICl and CHBr$_2$Cl similarly with CHBr$_3$ (figure 6.4). This could be indicative of substitution reactions with chloride ions as documented by Class and Ballschmiter (1988), or by related biological production mechanisms. In the case of CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ICl, it is likely that the correlation is due to production as they no longer correlate when they reach the surface ($r^2 = 0.1$), likely due to their different surface water lifetimes.

The production of CHBr$_2$Cl from CHBr$_3$ is a possibility. Chloride substitution of CHBr$_3$ is temperature dependent and half-lives can range between 5 years at 25°C and 74 years at 2°C (Hense and Quack, 2009). Hydrolysis is 10–100 times slower still (Geen, 1992; Vogel et al., 1987). Thus, if these reaction rates are correct, chlorine substitution of CHBr$_3$ is unlikely to explain the correlation as it is much too slow.

In addition, Hughes et al. (2013) demonstrated that CH$_2$Br$_2$ can be formed from CHBr$_3$ in diatom cultures. The TORERO CTD data showed that CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ were moderately correlated at their deep maximum ($r^2 = 0.5$) but showed much stronger correlation at the surface ($r^2 = 0.97$). If they are produced at depth then there must be a surface mechanism driving the improved correlation, a change in this mechanism could
then control CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2}:CHBr\textsubscript{3} emission ratios. Hughes et al. (2013) also demonstrated that CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} was broken down by bacteria while CHBr\textsubscript{3} was not. In the ETP, the vertical distribution of bacteria in the water column places the highest abundance in the top 30 m (Ma et al., 2009). This could explain the decreased ratio of CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2} to CHBr\textsubscript{3} at the surface compared to depths <30 m (figure 6.5). Similarly to CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2}, the correlation between CHBr\textsubscript{3} and CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl increased when comparing VSLH\textsubscript{(max)} to VSLH\textsubscript{(surface)} (r\textsuperscript{2} = 0.45 → 0.8). CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl was not measured in the experiments by Hughes et al. (2013) and may also have a source linked biologically to CHBr\textsubscript{3} (for CHBr\textsubscript{2}Cl:CHBr\textsubscript{3} vs. depth see appendix, figure A.4).

**Figure 6.5** – CH\textsubscript{2}Br\textsubscript{2}/CHBr\textsubscript{3} in depth profiles along 110\textdegree W during TORERO.

6.2 Factors controlling VSLH distribution in the water column

Understanding what controls the VSLH distribution in the vertical water column is key to predicting surface water concentrations and thus flux into the atmosphere, when working from a bottom-up scenario. For VSLH it is clear that concentrations at the surface derive from a multitude of parameters, biological and physical.

CTD depth profiles from the TORERO campaign were fairly inter-comparable, with shallow mixed layer depths (MLDs) and strong density gradients. Profiles from 4\textdegree and 5\textdegree,
110°W displayed similar temperature and salinity inversions characterising the MLD and had Chl-a maxima at the MLD and below (figure 5.51). Species such as CHBr$_3$ and to a lesser extent CH$_2$ICl, appear to be higher in concentration at depths corresponding to enhanced Chl-a (figure 5.52). At each CTD station (figure 5.52) the CH$_2$ClI and CHBr$_3$ maximum lies just below the corresponding MLD. Interestingly, CH$_2$I$_2$ appears to reach its maxima significantly below the MLD. CH$_3$I has maxima just below each MLD but concentrations are much higher at the surface, especially at 4°N. This fits with the theory of surface production (Happell and Wallace, 1996; Richter and Wallace, 2004), with an additional contribution from biological production.

A recent numerical model study of CH$_3$I in the East Tropical Atlantic by Stemmler et al. (2013) provides a new perspective on interpreting the distribution of CH$_3$I in a water column. Using the GOTM (General Ocean Turbulence Model) they model the production, destruction and the resultant concentration of CH$_3$I followed by the subsequent flux. Destruction is via photolysis, hydrolysis and chloride substitution reactions. Production is separated between biological production from phytoplankton and photochemical production from radical recombination between DOC and iodine atoms (Richter and Wallace, 2004). They run the model under biology-only and photochemical-only conditions and visualise the data as a seasonal time-series depth profile (figure 6.6).

In the first column of figure 6.6, only the biological source of CH$_3$I is switched on. This results in production below the MLD and at the surface during winter. Degradation occurs in a similar distribution but production is dominant. Production at the surface is balanced by loss from the water via flux into the air but production below the MLD results in concentrations increasing at this depth. Therefore sea-air emissions are controlled by mixed layer depth and net production.

In the second column of figure 6.6, only the photochemical source of CH$_3$I is switched on. Here production occurs at the surface where solar irradiance is greatest, however degradation also occurs at the surface where concentrations are controlled by this balance. Enhanced concentrations in the surface water are mixed down beneath the MLD, especially when the MLD is very shallow in summer. This forms a sub-MLD enhancement not dissimilar to the depth profile for the biological-only production regime. It is therefore very difficult to de-convolute the biological from the photochemical source strengths as photochemical production can also produce sub-MLD profiles that correlate with the Chl-a
6.2 Factors controlling VSLH distribution in the water column

The TORERO CCl₄ data supports this model. CCl₄ is likely to be purely anthropogenic and has been used as a tracer for dating water masses (Krysell et al., 1994). It partitions into the ocean from the atmosphere (section 6.3.1, table 6.6) and its distribution through the water column can be attributed to mixing and age of the water mass. The model of Stemmler et al. (2013) suggests that a sub-surface maxima can occur via the mixing down of gases from the surface. Figure 6.7 shows sub-surface enhancements which are likely due to the in-flux of atmospheric CCl₄ and its accumulation around the MLD boundary as the destruction term in surface water is removed due to the stability of CCl₄ in seawater (~90 years, Montzka et al. (2011)).

Figure 6.6 – CH₃I seasonal ocean depth profile adapted from model data from Stemmler et al. (2013). Left column models biological production only and the right column models photochemical production only. Model configured for the Cape Verde region (16°N, 24°W).
Figure 6.7 – CCl₄ cross section of the ocean between 5 and -5°N. Dotted line represents approximate MLD.

6.2.1 Another route to iodocarbon production?

A similar scenario could be hypothesised for other iodocarbons too. From the TORERO CTD profiles (figure 6.3), CH₂I₂ and CH₄ICl indicate that rapid photolysis is occurring in the surface water, as shown in laboratory studies of Jones and Carpenter (2005) and Martino et al. (2005). This is their major destruction mechanism and this would be exponentially greater at the surface than at depth. Biological production from plankton is predicted (Klick and Abrahamsson, 1992; Tokarczyk and Moore, 1994; Moore et al., 1996; Yamamoto et al., 2001) but there is a disconnect between iodocarbon concentrations, bromocarbons and Chl-a (chapter 5, section 5.4.1.1). A surface production mechanism could occur, as suggested by Martino et al., (2009), or at least, production disconnected from Chl-a. The deep maxima could then occur, like with CH₃I, just below the MLD due to accumulation from a lack of mixing and greater light attenuation at this depth. CH₂I₂ displays a notably deeper maximum compared to any other species measured (figure 5.52) and is the most photo-labile. The increasing CH₂I₂ concentration at depth could be due to a longer lifetime at depth rather than linked with deep production and the actual source could be located at any or all depths of the water column. This discussion diverts attention away from attempts to explain all VSLH production via linkages with Chl-a and highlights
the requirement to identify a more direct measure or at least define a suitable proxy. It is becoming increasing apparent that physical factors play an important role and it is likely that concentrations of the very short-lived species can be better constrained by assuming an average production rate and accurately modeling the physical parameters that lead to its subsequent sea-air flux.

### 6.3 Surface ocean- MBL exchange of VSLH

Once at the surface, VSLH can cross the sea-air interface and flux into the atmosphere. Many factors, such as wind-driven mixing, influence the rate at which a species moves across this interface and these factors can themselves impart a control upon surface VSLH concentrations.

Published iodocarbon flux data sets where the water and air concentrations have been measured simultaneously are very sparse (Moore and Groszko, 1999; Butler et al., 2007; Law and Sturges, 2007; Chuck et al., 2005; Jones et al., 2010). Often the air concentrations are assumed, extrapolated or interpolated. For the TORERO data the fluxes were always calculated from simultaneous air and water measurements and as the air sampling frequency was nearly three times greater than the water sampling frequency the air data was averaged so that the water data was always bracketed by two air samples.

The influx or out flux of VSLH from the ocean can be calculated as the departure of the observed VSLH concentrations in the surface ocean from equilibrium with air using equation 6.1 (Chuck et al., 2005) and is known as the percentage saturation anomaly.

\[
Saturation\ anomaly(\%) = 100 \left( \frac{[\text{water}] - [\text{air}]/H_c}{[\text{air}]/H_c} \right)
\] (6.1)

Where $H_c$ is the temperature dependent Henry’s law constant for the species of interest (Sander, 1999).

The saturation anomaly uses the temperature dependant gas over liquid form of the Henry’s law constant and as such is sensitive to SST due to decreased gas solubility at warmer water temperatures. CH$_3$I, CH$_2$ICl and CH$_2$I$_2$ are all super-saturated in the ocean.
Figure 6.8 – Continued over...
CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ are saturated in the ocean but to a lesser extent as their atmospheric lifetimes are comparatively much longer. In highly oligotrophic oceans with very low oceanic VSLH production and low oxidant concentration, the ocean can act as a sink for longer lived species such as CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CH$_3$BrCl. These two species in particular have very long photolytic lifetimes of 5000 and 15000 days, respectively. The ocean is clearly a strong source of CHCl$_3$ and an important sink of anthropogenically produced CCl$_4$.

6.3.1 Fluxes

The ocean-atmospheric flux was calculated as a two layer film model (Liss and Slater, 1974) using methods described by Johnson (2010) and explained in detail in section 1.8. Eight different measurements are required to calculate flux empirically (table 6.2), the other parameters can be calculated or are experimentally derived constants (section 1.8.3, table 1.5).

The major drivers of flux are wind speed, SST and the aqueous concentration. These affect the liquid phase transfer velocity ($K_w$), the speed at which a gas can move in or out of a liquid, which is rate determining as the gas phase transfer velocity term ($K_a$) is two orders of magnitude faster. This can be described as a water-side limiting scenario.
Table 6.2 - Measurements required for the calculation of ocean-atmospheric flux

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Symbol</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Unit</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>Atmospheric pressure</td>
<td>atm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_a$</td>
<td>Air-side concentration</td>
<td>mol cm$^{-3}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_w$</td>
<td>Water-side concentration</td>
<td>mol cm$^{-3}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>Air temperature</td>
<td>Kelvin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T (SST)</td>
<td>Sea-surface temperature</td>
<td>°C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U</td>
<td>Wind speed (preferably at 10 AMSL)</td>
<td>m s$^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>Salinity</td>
<td>PSU</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>%RH</td>
<td>Percentage relative humidity</td>
<td>%</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$K_a$ is omitted from flux calculations but here it was calculated and found to reduce the calculated flux by around 1-17% depending on species (table 6.3).

Figure 6.9 highlights the importance of wind speed to fluxes with $K_w$ being the major flux-controlling factor with a logarithmic relationship to wind speed. Yokouchi et al. (2001) and Jones et al. (2010) calculate the total transfer velocity ($K_t$) following Wanninkhof (1992) and Khalil et al. (1999) (equations 6.2 and 6.3).

\[
K = 0.31u^2f(t) \quad (6.2)
\]

\[
f(T) = \left( \frac{335.6M^{\frac{1}{3}}(1 - 0.065T + 0.002043T^2 - 2.6 \times 10^{-5}T^3)}{660} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \quad (6.3)
\]

Where $u$ is windspeed (m s$^{-1}$), $M$ is molecular mass of the species and $T$ is SST (°C). The method proposed by Johnson (2010), and used in this chapter, is more detailed and takes salinity into account when calculating $K_w$ (Chp1. figX). Both methods were tested using the TORERO dataset and it was found that by not factoring salinity into the calculation, fluxes are overestimated by between 1-18% (section 1.8).

The flux of the shortest-lived species CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ClI was very much wind speed de-
Figure 6.9 – Comparison of various observations, parameterizations and model predictions of the relationship between wind speed and liquid phase transfer velocity ($K_w$) scaled to a Schmidt number of 660. Adapted from Johnson (2010)
Figure 6.10 – Calculated sea-air fluxes for the TORERO campaign plotted along the cruise track and coloured by flux intensity.
Table 6.3 – Comparison of different flux calculation techniques. A&WSL: calculation includes air and water side limiting terms, WSL: Water side limiting term only.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Flux (Yokouchi et al. (2001))</th>
<th>Flux (Johnson (2010)) WSL</th>
<th>Flux (Johnson (2010)) A&amp;WSL</th>
<th>%reduction (Johnson (2010) WSL Vs A&amp;WSL)</th>
<th>%reduction (Yokouchi et al. (2001) vs Johnson (2010))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>3.18</td>
<td>2.74</td>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>25.97</td>
<td>21.63</td>
<td>21.13</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_4$</td>
<td>-3.43</td>
<td>-2.98</td>
<td>-2.97</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl$_2$</td>
<td>7.45</td>
<td>6.84</td>
<td>6.56</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>1.26</td>
<td>1.24</td>
<td>1.14</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$ICl</td>
<td>1.90</td>
<td>1.87</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_2$Cl</td>
<td>3.35</td>
<td>3.37</td>
<td>3.13</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr$_3$</td>
<td>7.11</td>
<td>8.14</td>
<td>7.01</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$I$_2$</td>
<td>1.11</td>
<td>1.36</td>
<td>1.11</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Dependent as wind speed not only controls the transfer velocity, it also imparts a control on the surface concentration of these species. Surface wind shear drives surface ocean mixing and defines the speed at which transport to the surface can occur.

Apart from a number of spikes the flux of bromocarbons along the cruise track remained relatively constant and did not change dramatically as the ship transitioned between areas of high or low oceanic productivity. At the beginning of the cruise, CH$_2$Br$_2$ was undersaturated in the surface ocean (figure 6.11). At times, such as around the equator, fluxes alone could not fully explain the changes in observed air-side concentration and this is discussed in section 6.5.1.

Salinity dependent Henry’s law constants were calculated using the numerical scheme by Johnson (2010) (section 1.8.3.1). This tended to shift the equilibrium more toward the air-side and had the greatest effect on gas flux into the ocean where it served to virtually eliminate any in-flux, from atmosphere to ocean, by CH$_2$Br$_2$ or CHBr$_3$ and reduce the in-flux of CCl$_4$.

Extrapolated globally, fluxes during TORERO (table 6.6) were much lower than literature estimates (table 6.5) with the exception of CHCl$_3$. Fluxes during TORERO represent open ocean fluxes and medians compare well with median (range) tropical ocean fluxes calculated by Butler et al. (2007) for CHBr$_3$ (6.1 (-1.4–51) nmol m$^{-2}$ day$^{-1}$) TORERO vs.
Figure 6.11 – Calculated sea-air fluxes for the TORERO campaign plotted along the cruise track and coloured by flux intensity.
Table 6.4 – Average (range) VSLH flux using a Henry’s law constant calculated for pure water compared to the salinity dependent Henry’s law constant calculated using the scheme by Johnson (2010).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Mean flux (pure water) nmol m(^{-2}) day(^{-1})</th>
<th>Mean flux (salinity dependent) nmol m(^{-2}) day(^{-1})</th>
<th>Mean ∆ flux nmol m(^{-2}) day(^{-1})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH(_3)I</td>
<td>2.7 (0.1–17.4)</td>
<td>2.8 (0.1–17.5)</td>
<td>0.05 (0.001–0.14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)BrCl</td>
<td>-0.1 (-0.9–0.9)</td>
<td>-0.1 (-0.7–1.0)</td>
<td>0.1 (0.0–0.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl(_3)</td>
<td>21.3 (0.63–90.2)</td>
<td>22.1 (0.68–92.0)</td>
<td>0.8 (0.02–2.45)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_4)</td>
<td>-3.6 (-8.2–0.1)</td>
<td>-2.1 (-5.3–1.1)</td>
<td>1.5 (0.1–3.7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl(_2)</td>
<td>6.6 (0.1–107.8)</td>
<td>6.7 (0.1–108.0)</td>
<td>0.1 (0.0–0.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)Br(_2)</td>
<td>1.5 (-1.1–18.4)</td>
<td>1.9 (-0.3–18.7)</td>
<td>0.4 (0.0–0.9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)I(_2)</td>
<td>1.7 (0.0–8.1)</td>
<td>1.7 (0.0–8.2)</td>
<td>0.0 (0.0–0.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr(_2)Cl</td>
<td>3.1 (0.1–59.8)</td>
<td>3.2 (0.1–59.9)</td>
<td>0.1 (0.0–0.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr(_3)</td>
<td>7.1 (-1.4–50.9)</td>
<td>8.0 (-0.1–52.1)</td>
<td>0.9 (0.3–2.0)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)I (_2)</td>
<td>1.1 (0.1–11.1)</td>
<td>1.1 (0.1–11.1)</td>
<td>0.0 (0.0–0.1)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

5.7 (0.2–27) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\) and CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) (1.2 (-1.1–18.4) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\)) TORERO vs. 1.9 (0.4–6.9) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\) but are much lower for CH\(_3\)I (2.4 (0.1–17.4) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\)) TORERO vs. 10 (1.6–33) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\) and compare better with southern ocean fluxes (2 (0.4–9.8) nmol m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\)).

The flux of CHCl\(_3\) during TORERO was more than double the estimated mean global oceanic flux calculated by Worton et al. (2006) (table 6.5). It is likely that the tropical waters of the East Pacific make a significant contribution to the CHCl\(_3\) global budget and possible that the ocean flux calculation by Worton et al. (2006) underestimates the CHCl\(_3\) ocean source or that there is a large unaccounted for anthropogenic source.
# Chapter 6: Factors controlling the emission of VSLH

## Table 6.5 – Literature estimates of VSLH fluxes.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Flux rate (Gg yr(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH(_3)I</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>130–360</td>
<td>Moore and Groszko (1999)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>210</td>
<td>Bell et al. (2002a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>610</td>
<td>Butler et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>303</td>
<td>Ordóñez et al. (2012)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Terrestrial</td>
<td>90–123</td>
<td>Bell et al. (2002a); Sive et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)ClI</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>132</td>
<td>Law and Sturges (2007); Chuck et al. (2005)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>130</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>280</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>234</td>
<td>Ordóñez et al. (2012)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)I(_2)</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>Jones et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>116</td>
<td>Ordóñez et al. (2012)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl(_3)</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>Worton et al. (2006)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Soils</td>
<td>100</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>90</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr(_3)</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>822</td>
<td>Quack and Wallace (2003)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>400–600</td>
<td>Warwick et al. (2006)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>840</td>
<td>Butler et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>Liang et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)Br(_2)</td>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>108</td>
<td>Warwick et al. (2006)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>300</td>
<td>Butler et al. (2007)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>61</td>
<td>Liang et al. (2010)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
6.3 Surface ocean- MBL exchange of VSLH

Table 6.6 – Summary of VSLH fluxes during TORERO. Average flux is representative of a mostly background, open-ocean source. Fluxes extrapolated assuming total ocean area is \(3.6 \times 10^{14} \text{ m}^2\) (Liss and Slater, 1974), area of Pacific as 46% of the Earth’s oceans and the east tropical Pacific (ETP) 17%.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>NH</th>
<th>SH</th>
<th>Total Ocean</th>
<th>Pacific</th>
<th>ETP</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CH}_3\text{I})</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CHCl}_3)</td>
<td>21.1</td>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>341</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CCl}_4)</td>
<td>-3.0</td>
<td>-3.8</td>
<td>-1.7</td>
<td>-62</td>
<td>-26</td>
<td>-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CHBrCl}_2)</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>9.8</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CH}_2\text{Br}_2)</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CHI}_2\text{Cl})</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CHBr}_2\text{Cl})</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CHBr}_3)</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>6.2</td>
<td>239</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CH}_2\text{I}_2)</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 6.7 - Contribution of bromine and iodine to the MBL from open-ocean fluxes calculated during FORERO and extrapolated globally.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Bromine nmol m(^{-2}) day(^{-1})</th>
<th>Iodine nmol m(^{-2}) day(^{-1})</th>
<th>Total ocean</th>
<th>Pacific</th>
<th>East tropical Pacific</th>
<th>NH</th>
<th>SH</th>
<th>NH</th>
<th>SH</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>1.33</td>
<td>2.55</td>
<td>2.14</td>
<td>2.41</td>
<td>3.95</td>
<td>1.83</td>
<td>2.09</td>
<td>2.72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2.81</td>
<td>1.48</td>
<td>4.29</td>
<td>8.96</td>
<td>22.65</td>
<td>33.31</td>
<td>3.94</td>
<td>7.88</td>
<td>11.82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.37</td>
<td>1.31</td>
<td>4.64</td>
<td>6.27</td>
<td>21.02</td>
<td>27.05</td>
<td>2.22</td>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>4.92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.34</td>
<td>3.22</td>
<td>4.56</td>
<td>3.22</td>
<td>2.22</td>
<td>2.22</td>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>2.70</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Bromine Gg year(^{-1})</th>
<th>Iodine Gg year(^{-1})</th>
<th>Total ocean</th>
<th>Pacific</th>
<th>East tropical Pacific</th>
<th>NH</th>
<th>SH</th>
<th>NH</th>
<th>SH</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3.13</td>
<td>2.29</td>
<td>6.27</td>
<td>21.02</td>
<td>32.72</td>
<td>3.67</td>
<td>1.48</td>
<td>8.96</td>
<td>22.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9.84</td>
<td>1.34</td>
<td>8.96</td>
<td>22.65</td>
<td>33.31</td>
<td>2.52</td>
<td>2.81</td>
<td>2.81</td>
<td>2.81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1.53</td>
<td>3.53</td>
<td>2.14</td>
<td>18.52</td>
<td>25.71</td>
<td>1.20</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>1.20</td>
<td>0.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>598</td>
<td>274</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>598</td>
<td>274</td>
<td>82</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>82</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>279</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>279</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: NH = Northern Hemisphere, SH = Southern Hemisphere.
6.4 Wind speed dependence

Wind speed appears to be the dominant control on CH$_3$I and CH$_3$I$_2$ air concentrations, controlling their flux in addition to mixing them to the ocean surface (figures 6.12 and 6.15).

6.4.1 Surface water VSLH vs wind speed (U)

As discussed, windspeed is an important control on VSLH emission. Combined with thermohaline mixing, wind speed controls mixing in the water column which was discussed in section 6.2 and used to investigate the distribution of VSLH in depth profiles. Transport of VSLH in the water column determines water concentrations and therefore, especially for gases which have short lifetimes in seawater such as the dihalomethanes, wind speed may enhance surface concentrations. For other gases where volatilisation from the ocean mixed layer is the major sink, increased wind speed could deplete surface water concentrations (figure 6.12).

During TORERO, increased horizontal winds were generally associated with increased surface seawater concentrations of CH$_3$I, CH$_3$I$_2$ and CH$_3$ICl (figure 6.12), but relationships with other gases were less clear. Tegtmeier et al. (2013a) use the FLEXPART model (Stohl et al., 2005) to highlight how the simultaneous occurrence of large CH$_3$I emissions and strong vertical uplift can result in a greater contribution of CH$_3$I to the TTL with maximum modelled mixing ratios of 0.6 ppt (in the upper TTL, based on peak emissions during the SHIVA-Sonne campaign in the coastal West Pacific). In the TORERO dataset it is evident that the conditions required for rapid vertical transport to the UTLS, such as high wind speed, SST and convection, not only exert a control on ocean-atmosphere exchange but also on surface water concentrations of CH$_3$ICl, despite the flux to atmosphere being a major loss process for gases in the surface ocean.

CH$_3$ICl concentrations in surface water are likely due to fresh entrainment from depth to the surface during periods of high wind speed on a timescale shorter than its photolytic and removal lifetimes in the surface water. At low wind speed, the loss rate > mixing rate and at high wind speeds, the loss rate < mixing rate. At wind speeds greater than 8 m s$^{-1}$ surface water concentrations appear to drop. This could be due to greater sea-air flux at
Figure 6.12 – Correlations between wind speed (U, m s\(^{-1}\)) and selected VSLH surface water concentrations (pmol dm\(^{-3}\))
higher wind speed where loss rate dominates once more whilst the supply of CH$_2$ICl to the surface remains the same either by a negligible increase in mixing with wind speed or by VSLH concentrations throughout the mixed layer depth becoming constant.

![Figure 6.13](image)

**Figure 6.13** – CH$_2$I$_2$ surface water concentrations (red circles, pmol dm$^{-3}$) and incoming short wave radiation (black squares, W m$^{-2}$) sorted into 1 m s$^{-1}$ bins then averaged. Y-error bars represent the spread of the data within each bin.

CH$_2$I$_2$ surface water concentrations could be expected to increase with wind speed but the data shows a relatively flat relationship and possibly a slight enhancement at low wind speed (figure 6.12). This could be caused by noisy data due to concentrations at the surface being very low as CH$_2$I$_2$ is rapidly photolysed. Low wind speeds also coincided with high solar irradiance (figure 6.13) and may tentatively suggest a surface photochemical production mechanism.

Surface production of CH$_2$I$_2$ and CH$_2$ICl was discussed in section 6.2.1 with reference to Martino et al. (2009) who report production of these species from the reaction of DOM with HOI and I$_2$, formed at the sea surface from the reaction of O$_3$ with dissolved iodide. Low wind speed regimes during TORERO were encountered predominately between the equator and 5$^\circ$S (figure 5.24). This area of the Pacific is known as the doldrums and
gives this ocean its name due to the calm waters, low wind and high solar irradiance which historically would hinder sailing ships crossing the equator. During TORERO this was also a region of very low O$_3$ (section 5.3.2 figure 5.23). Due to these very low ozone concentrations it is unlikely that surface production here would follow this mechanism.

CH$_3$I and CH$_2$I$_2$ in surface water show a slight increase with wind speed but are not as dependent as CH$_2$ICl. CH$_3$I oceanic lifetime is longer than that of CH$_2$ICl and mixing throughout the water column can occur over a longer timescale without as much photochemical destruction at the surface. It is also produced at the surface photochemically thus it would be expected to show an increase in surface concentration at low wind speeds—less mixing, and greater solar irradiance, which it doesn’t. This demonstrates that care must be taken in the interpretation of these datasets as many factors are working together that are difficult to deconvolute. CH$_3$I is highly super-saturated in the surface ocean (500-2000%) with respect to air (figure 6.8) and the resulting flux may not significantly influence water concentrations.
Figure 6.14 – Concentrations of CH$_2$ICl (top) and CH$_2$I$_2$ (bottom) in air (coloured by wind speed. Blue is low, red is high) and water (black circles).

6.4.2 Air VSLH vs wind speed (U)

VSLH in the surface water is emitted into the air which is driven by wind speed, among other factors including the concentration gradient. Where air concentrations are driven by local sea-air flux, such as for open ocean regions or for very short-lived species, the wind speed exerts a strong control on the flux (figure 6.15). Longer lived species such as the
bromocarbons show less of this relationship and include data points where the flux appears to be anomalously high. This is due to the air concentration not being representative of the local surface water concentrations probably due to atmospheric transport or contribution from another source.

The combination of enhanced surface water concentrations, flux and vertical transport during periods of high wind speed, could result in the underestimate of the quantities of VSLH lofted to the UTLS if not accounted for by models.

VSLH air concentrations are a balance between emissions and sinks. As photolytic destruction is much faster in the atmosphere than in water, the air data displays much more scatter depending upon time of day and solar irradiance. The contributions of photolysis, dilution and flux would require a model to deconvolute. In order to visualize the air data trends more easily it was averaged into wind speed bins for every 1 m s\(^{-1}\) from 0-12 m s\(^{-1}\) (figure 6.16). For CH\(_2\)ICl the air concentrations are wind speed dependent because at lower wind speeds, photolytic destruction dominates and at higher windspeed, emissions dominate.

CH\(_3\)I displays more wind speed dependence in air than it does in water. This could be because it has a shorter lifetime in air and wind-driven flux controls its atmospheric concentration. Wind has less of an effect on its water concentration as it has a surface photochemical source and does not depend upon mixing from depth like CH\(_2\)ICl.

CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) and CHBr\(_3\) tend to increase with wind speed as the air concentrations are controlled by flux but are ultimately limited by dilution, causing the relationship to breakdown at higher wind speeds. Dilution of emissions is evident for CHBrCl\(_2\), CHBr\(_2\)Cl, CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) and CHCl\(_3\), where higher wind speeds result in lower air-side concentrations, probably due to mixing of the emissions throughout a thicker MBL.

CHCl\(_3\) displays an interesting relationship with wind speed because the bulk data shows a positive relationship whereas including only SH data, a negative relationship is evident. This could be linked to the low wind speed and high solar irradiance regime in the SH cruise leg and the observation of a slight positive diurnal cycle in the SH data (section 6.5.3).
Figure 6.15 – VSLH flux (nmol m$^{-2}$ day$^{-1}$) correlation with wind speed (U, m s$^{-1}$).
Chapter 6: Factors controlling the emission of VSLH

Figure 6.16 – Continued over...
Figure 6.16 – VSLH air concentrations (ppt) during TORERO vs. wind speed (m s\(^{-1}\)). Data was binned by wind speed into 1 m s\(^{-1}\) groups. The box represents the interquartile range, and the line, plus and cross represent the median, mean and range respectively.
6.4.2.1 CH₂ICl wind speed relationship

An exponential relationship between wind speed up to 9 m s⁻¹ and CH₂ICl atmospheric concentration has previously been observed at Appledore Island in the North Atlantic (Varner et al., 2008), however measurements from Hawaii by the same authors, a more relevant site for comparison with this dataset, did not show a wind speed relationship.

The observation by Varner et al. (2008) is consistent with the binned CH₂ICl data from TORERO with the exception of concentrations during the latter being much lower due to this being an open ocean dataset rather than coastal, as is the case at Appledore Island (figure 6.17, figure 6.18).

![Figure 6.17](image)

**Figure 6.17** – Wind speed (m s⁻¹) versus CH₂ICl mixing ratios (pptv) at Appledore Island, Japan. CH₂ICl was binned into equally weighted groups of 1 m s⁻¹ intervals and then averaged. Error bars indicate standard error of the binned grouping. Reproduced from (Varner et al., 2008).

Varner et al. (2008) attribute the drop in concentrations at wind speeds >9 m s⁻¹ to their high wind speed regime sampling coinciding with daytime measurements where solar radiation was high and photolysis rates fast. This is not the case for the TORERO data where high wind speeds generally coincided with lower solar irradiance (figure 6.19). The drop in concentrations at wind speeds >9 m s⁻¹ could be due to more dilution and a deeper boundary layer depth or could be an artifact of the statistical approach (figure 6.19).

Figure 6.19 shows the number of data points per wind speed bin (blue line), which follows
the expected normal distribution. The distribution of CH$_2$ICl data points is strongly weighted towards night time and is not distributed normally as concentrations were always very near to the limit of detection (figure 6.20). Averaged values at the extremes of the binned wind speed dataset have significantly less data and the weighting toward zero concentration results in a negative bias toward the averaged concentration.

The relationships between VSLH and wind speed shown here confirms that a multitude of factors control VSLH and that wind speed is just one of them. However, it does impart a significant influence and evidently, wind speed controls on iodocarbon fluxes must be constrained in order to accurately model global budgets.
Chapter 6: Factors controlling the emission of VSLH

Figure 6.19 – CH₂ICl mixing ratios (grey circles) and shortwave radiation binned into equally weighted groups of 1 m s⁻¹ intervals and then averaged (black and red circles, respectively). The blue line represents the distribution of the binned data.

Figure 6.20 – Left: Binned solar radiation averages corresponding to individual CH₂ICl air measurements. Right: Binned CH₂ICl concentrations.
6.5 Factors controlling the atmospheric distribution of VSLH

6.5.1 Equatorial enhancements

There have been many measurements made of VSLH enhancements in equatorial regions which have been attributed to enhanced emissions from biologically productive waters associated with upwelling of cold water and nutrients (Quack and Wallace, 2003; Quack et al., 2004, 2007a; Class and Ballschmiter, 1988; Atlas et al., 1993). These measurements have a strong influence on global emission estimates as they span such large areas of ocean. Most global models such as GeosChem, which lacks the fine details of local emissions, includes an equatorial enhancement between 20°N and 20°S in its emission inventory (Hossaini et al., 2013). The question is whether the measurements that led to this assumption, which were often atmospheric mixing ratios, are actually representative of enhanced emissions and can be extrapolated across the entire equatorial region.

An enhancement of CHBr$_3$ in air was observed during TORERO across the Pacific equatorial upwelling where the northern and southern hemisphere water masses diverge. Water concentrations in this area show a small enhancement, however the calculated fluxes do not (figure 6.22). According to the observations, water concentrations are not sufficient to maintain the enhanced air concentrations relative to other sections of the cruise track.

Fluxes during TORERO were calculated using simultaneous measurements of both sides of the sea-air interface and allow us to separate flux-driven air concentration relationships from other factors. This allows us to determine whether oceanic production and emissions explain air concentrations or if other, physical relationships play a role.

The enhancement observed in air concentrations measured at the equator is not driven by flux because the flux does not change. This indicates a disconnect between the correlating sea and air concentrations, likely due to low wind speed at this point decreasing the transfer velocity from sea-air, despite the higher water concentrations. If the air concentrations cannot be explained by oceanic emissions then their levels must be explained by another factor.
Figure 6.21 – Measurements of equatorial enhancements of MBL bromoform taken from Quack and Wallace (2003), over the Atlantic (1, 20°–10°W [Class and Ballschmiter (1988)]) and Pacific (2, 80°–160°W [Schauffler et al. (1999)]; 3, 145°–165°W [Atlas et al. (1993)]).
Figure 6.22 – CHBr$_3$ and CH$_2$Br$_2$ concentrations in air (red), water (blue) and the subsequent calculated flux from water to air (green) temporally along the cruise track. Blue sections indicate equatorial regions and red defines the southern hemisphere leg.
6.5.1.1 MBL

Figure 6.23 – Modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) averaged for February during the TORERO cruise. Colour scale represents PBL depth, pressure at surface minus pressure at the top of the boundary layer.

Low boundary layer mixing in the equatorial region offers an explanation for the enhancement in air. Cold water upwelled at the equator produces increased biological production but the resulting bromocarbon flux is not enhanced therefore cannot explain air-side concentrations. The cold waters also cause the MBL to sink as it cools and it becomes very stable (figure 6.23). This serves to accumulate ocean derived trace gases close to the ocean surface and as they are not being mixed away and diluted, enhanced levels can be observed. Therefore, equatorial enhancements can often be attributed to meteorology rather than biology.

A good example of this can be seen in figure 6.24 where the highest CHBr$_3$ concentration is seen just below the equator 110°W over the equatorial upwelling corresponding to a drop in sea surface temperature. This is contrast with the lowest CHBr$_3$ concentration measured at around the same latitude 95°W off the coast of the Galapagos islands (figure 6.25). This region has a higher ocean chlorophyll concentration and is usually an area of coastal island upwelling but at this time the Peruvian cold tongue was weak, SSTs were high and there was little upwelling in this area. The high SST could thicken the MBL and the increased mixing result in bromocarbon depletion comparative to the 110°W region.
6.5 Factors controlling the atmospheric distribution of VSLH

Figure 6.24 – GeosChem modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) averaged for 10/02/2012 when the ship was at position 110°W, 0°N. Grey scale represents PBL depth, pressure at surface minus pressure at the top of the boundary layer.

despite the increased ocean productivity.

At latitudes below the equatorial upwelling, air ascends displaced by the sinking air over the cold region. This causes a decrease in the observed air-side concentrations as they are mixed and diluted. This is especially evident in the CHCl₃, CH₂Br₂ and CHBr₃ data, which show a rapid drop in concentration at lower latitudes. CHBr₃ is a little less affected due to the relatively high fresh source emissions replenishing atmospheric concentrations whereas CH₂Br₂ and CHCl₃ are longer lived and their MBL concentrations are more representative of well mixed, more background in magnitude, levels.

Figure 6.26 shows the modeled Planetary Boundary Layer (PBL, analogous to MBL) time series with CHBr₃ and CH₂Br₂ air concentration measurements. CHBr₃ concentration is negatively correlated with PBL thickness especially in the first half of the cruise where wind speed in the model was well constrained and correlated well with TORERO measurements. In the latter half the model meteorology did not correlate as well with measurements (figure 6.27). Model wind speed was underestimated in the southern hemisphere cruise leg and thus dilution would be greater. Water concentrations did not decrease during this period and fluxes remained fairly constant.
Figure 6.25 – GeosChem modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) averaged for 22/02/2012 when the ship was at position 95°W, 0°N. Grey scale represents PBL depth, pressure at surface minus pressure at the top of the boundary layer.

Figure 6.26 – Modeled planetary boundary layer depth (MBL) along the TORERO cruise track (blue line) with corresponding CHBr$_3$ and CH$_2$Br$_2$ atmospheric mixing ratios as red and black circles, respectively.
This ocean driven MBL stability scheme can also be applied to the equatorial Atlantic Ocean. Enhanced bromocarbon air concentrations have been measured around the Mauritanian upwelling region (Quack et al., 2007a; Carpenter et al., 2009; Andrews et al., 2013) where cold water upwelled at the coast could result in a stable boundary layer and enhanced atmospheric concentrations. The theory of a sinking MBL over cold water causing adjacent vertical atmospheric transport and boundary layer thickening could explain the open ocean measurements of CH$_2$ICl made during the TROMPEX campaign (section 4.3.2). The theory of an open ocean source of CH$_2$ICl still holds but with vertical mixing transporting it to the altitudes at which it was measured on timescales shorter than its local lifetime of 0.1 days (Montzka et al., 2011). This could be why it was observed to increase in concentration further from the upwelling. At the upwelling it was likely produced in the biologically rich waters and fluxed into the air but not mixed to high enough altitude to be measured by the aircraft before being photolysed.
6.5.2 Hemispheric differences crossing the ITCZ

Positive correlations between VSLH, notably bromocarbons, are well documented (Carpenter and Liss, 2000; Quack and Wallace, 2003; Quack et al., 2004; Butler et al., 2007; Quack et al., 2007a,b; Carpenter et al., 2007, 2009; Raimund et al., 2011). These species often increase proportionally, which is likely due to similar sources in the environment. This can be direct biogenic production from micro/macro algae and phytoplankton or from subsequent substitution reactions with chlorine in seawater. Once emitted into the atmosphere from the source, bromocarbons will be subject to dilution and processing primarily from reaction with OH and breakdown by photolysis. Different bromocarbons have different local lifetimes based upon the combination of OH and photolytic degradation, listed in table 6.8.

Table 6.8 – Atmospheric lifetimes of various VLSH species. Values from Law and Sturges (2007).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>OH</th>
<th>Photolytic</th>
<th>Local</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHCl₃</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>&gt;15000</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBrCl₂</td>
<td>121</td>
<td>222</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂BrCl</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>15000</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂Br₂</td>
<td>123</td>
<td>5000</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₂Cl</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHBr₃</td>
<td>76</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6.5.2.1 Chloroform distribution

Although its use as a common laboratory solvent is widespread and well known, the main source of chloroform (CHCl₃) in the environment is actually from biogenic sources (table 6.9). A clear inter-hemispherical difference in the mixing ratio is well documented with CHCl₃ concentrations being much greater in the northern hemisphere (Laturnus et al., 2002). The reasons for this are unclear as the ocean is the major source of CHCl₃ into the atmosphere (44%, table 6.9) yet the northern hemisphere only contains around 40%
of the global oceans. The influence of biogenic terrestrial sources is also significant despite land only covering 29% of the earth's surface.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Average emission (Gg yr$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Biogenic sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Ocean</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total terrestrial</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Anthropogenic sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paper manufacture</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water treatment</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Other</strong></td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinks</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH radicals</td>
<td>560</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transport to stratosphere</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHCl$_3$ air measurements at the beginning of the campaign were the highest recorded during TORERO, despite being furthest from land and the lowest surface Chl-a concentrations. However, during the cruise, this was the most northerly point and air masses originate from the west coast of America.

The contribution of anthropogenic emissions to the atmospheric concentration of CHCl$_3$ in the northern hemisphere is much greater than in the southern hemisphere and usage statistics have been recorded that highlight this inter-hemispheric gradient (figure 6.29).

Although anthropogenic emission is much greater in the NH, the global contribution of these emissions is relatively small, if the data from Worton et al. (2006) is correct. The ocean is the dominant source and the SH contains the largest oceanic area therefore, combining terrestrial, oceanic and anthropogenic emissions and comparing between the hemispheres should not result in a 50% decrease in concentrations when transitioning across the ITCZ as seen during TORERO.
Figure 6.28 – CHCl₃ (red circles) and CH₂Br₂ (blue circles) mixing ratios throughout the TORERO campaign. Blue sections indicate when the ship was crossing the ITCZ and the red section represents measurements of air which had originated from the southern hemisphere.

Figure 6.29 – CHCl₃ emissions from anthropogenic sources, reproduced from Aucott et al. (1999).
Because CHBr$_3$ is shorter-lived than CHCl$_3$, by plotting $\ln(\text{CHCl}_3/\text{CHBr}_3)$ against $\ln(\text{CHBr}_3)$ (figure 6.30, top), the ratio should increase with decreasing CHBr$_3$ concentration if atmospheric decay is taking place. This yields two distinct linear relationships with a clear latitudinal dependence. The negative gradient shows decay away from the source and the offset, parallel slopes show that the emission ratios are different in the northern and southern hemispheres but the rate of change is the same. That is the corresponding CHCl$_3$ concentration when CHBr$_3$ is emitted into the atmosphere is lower in the southern hemisphere but processed at the same rate as in the northern hemisphere. This is consistent with an additional anthropogenic component in the northern hemisphere in addition to a biogenic source; likely the same source or linked to the source of CHBr$_3$. Replacing CHCl$_3$ with CH$_2$Br$_2$ produces a similar distribution (figure 6.30, bottom). This would also suggest a NH anthropogenic CH$_2$Br$_2$ source. However, there is no evidence that any CH$_2$Br$_2$ is produced anthropogenically and as discussed, the anthropogenic component of CHCl$_3$ is not that strong.

The influence of coastal, Californian upwelling air could account for the greater CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ in the northern hemisphere data. Back trajectories (section 5.2.5, figure 5.15) show air masses travelling along the Californian coastline before taking a very direct route to the point of analysis. As CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ have reasonably long lifetimes it is likely that open ocean measurements would be influenced by coastal emissions whereas for CHBr$_3$, measured concentrations are more representative of local sources. As the ship entered the SH leg the air masses originate from the southern Pacific and have not touched land for at least 8 days where just a few of the trajectories touch the coastal waters of Chile.

An interesting observation is the high salinity measured during the SH leg. This is likely due to being south of the ITCZ with a lack of rain and high solar irradiance causing evaporation of surface water. Bromocarbon ratios show a similar shift with salinity as they do with latitude (appendix, figure A.3), which highlights that multiple factors can be linked to VSLH distribution and they may be directly linked to VSLH or indirectly though one another. Factors may correlate with VSLH when actually they are a result of another factor linked to VSLH and do not actually impact VSLH at all. In order to understand VSLH distribution, factors must be designated as driving or driven.

Although the log ratio of CHBr$_3$ to CHBr$_2$ is expected to be fairly constant, Lin and
Figure 6.30 – Ratios of CHCl$_3$ (top) and CH$_2$Br$_2$ (bottom) to CHBr$_3$. Decreasing ratio shows processing of the air mass, y-axis offset shows different emission ratios, slope = ratio of the lifetimes. Data coloured by latitude.
Manley (2012) see seasonal differences in CH$_2$Br$_2$/CHBr$_3$ ratios produced from seawater treated with bromoperoxidase and Liu et al. (2013a) find that heterotrophic bacterial abundance was significantly correlated with CH$_2$Br$_2$ but not with CHBr$_3$. As each hemisphere is in its respective winter or summer the CH$_2$Br$_2$/CHBr$_3$ release ratio could change with latitude.

Utilising the GeosChem model, CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ can be modelled across the course of a year (2012) along the 110°W line, where the TORERO samples were taken, at different latitudes between 30°S and 30°N and averaged monthly (figure 6.31).

![Figure 6.31](image)

**Figure 6.31** – CH$_2$Br$_2$ modelled using GeosChem across the course of 2012 at 10° increments between 30°S and 30°N along 110°W.

The model shows a clear seasonality and displays out of phase cycles between each hemisphere. The seasonal cycle does not appear as strongly in the northern hemisphere, which could be due to the coastal source influence discussed previously.

Plotting CHBr$_3$ in the same way predicts that a very similar pattern would exist as for CH$_2$Br$_2$ (figure 6.32). The emission ratio of CH$_2$Br$_2$ and CHBr$_3$ is fixed within the model, so differences in seasonality must be due to differences in oxidant concentrations.
6.5.3 VSLH in air positively correlated to solar radiation

A few of the VSLH species showed diurnal cycles in air which were positively correlated to solar irradiance. Most notable were CHBrCl$_2$ and CHCl$_3$ which increased with increasing solar irradiance, although with a temporal offset. The cycles were most prominent in the Southern Hemisphere for CHCl$_3$, this may be due to a decrease in the background air concentration rendering the diurnal more visible. There was no noticeable diurnal cycle in the surface water data for either species but this could be obscured by sampling reproducibility noise and/or temporal resolution of the water sampling when compared to the air data. For CHBrCl$_2$ the air concentrations were similar between hemispheres with surface water concentrations actually decreasing (figure 6.33) and air concentrations increasing slightly. Flux calculations (section 6.3.1) show that the flux decreases in the Southern Hemisphere due to the drop in wind speed. Therefore the extra CHBrCl$_2$ is likely not coming from the ocean and the rapid diurnal cycling suggests that it is likely not transported a large distance and thus this is not due to a contribution from a remote source.

Two theories can be presented to attempt to explain these results. First is photochemical production of these species in the surface water. Production in the surface water is unlikely
Figure 6.33 – CHCl₃ (top) and CHBrCl₂ (bottom) showing evidence of positive diurnal cycles. Air data coloured by air temperature, water measurements in black.
as the diurnals were not observed in the water data and in the case of CHBrCl₂, the water concentration decreased whilst the air concentration increased around the 8th February. A possibility is production in the ocean layer at the very surface. Surface water measurements were taken from approximately 3 m depth and may not have been representative of the very top of the ocean surface. Wind speed was very low during the Southern Hemisphere leg of the cruise and as such the sea surface was very flat. Sea surface temperature was high and displayed a greater diurnal variation during the second half of the cruise, similar to the CHBrCl₂ concentrations.

![Figure 6.34](image)

**Figure 6.34** – CHBrCl₂ (blue line) and CHCl₃ (black line) showing evidence of a positive diurnal cycle. Short-wave irradiance shown in red

A second theory is that there exists a positive interference with the air sampling technique. One such possibility is the retention of analytes on the 1/2” PFA sampling line which are desorbed as the line is heated by the sun. CHBrCl₂ concentrations were only weakly correlated with air temperature (figure 6.35) but this may not be directly linked. An argument against sample artifacts is that CHCl₃ and CHBrCl₂ are volatile and the positive diurnal cycle was not seen in other, less volatile species. Some other compounds, namely CH₂Br₂, CH₂BrCl and CHBr₂Cl, showed possible evidence of a positive diurnal when averaged across the entire Southern Hemisphere section of the cruise as can be seen in figure 5.45. However, CHBr₃ and CH₂I₂ showed no clear positive diurnal despite being the least volatile compounds analysed and most susceptible to sticking on sampling lines. Recent sample line tests have found high CHBrCl₂ when drawing air through the sample
line, with concentrations reducing over time. This supports the theory of desorption of analytes from the sample line walls during solar heating.

Figure 6.35 – Weak positive correlation between CHBrCl₂ and air temperature. Linear regression line shown in red.
6.6 Summary

Whilst individual CTD depth profiles showed that VSLH generally peaked at or near the Chl-a maximum, analyses showed very little bulk correlation between Chl-a and VSLH concentrations when comparing all CTD profiles collected during TORERO. Generally it seems that VSLH sea-air emissions cannot be parameterised as a simple function of Chl-a. The very short-lived VSLH CH\(_2\)I\(_2\) and CH\(_2\)ICl actually displayed a negative relationship with Chl-a, as well as between surface and deep maximum concentrations. These relationships could be attributed to physical and mixing processes. Higher surface concentrations of Chl-a are associated with greater turbidity and attenuation of solar irradiation which is likely to result in decreased surface water depletion of CH\(_2\)I\(_2\) and CH\(_2\)ICl during daylight hours. High surface Chl-a may also be associated with enhanced mixing, leading to higher entrainment of VSLS from the Chl-a maximum. This analysis highlights the importance of physical processes on the distribution of CH\(_2\)I\(_2\) and CH\(_2\)ICl throughout the water column.

Conversely, CHBr\(_3\), CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) and CHBr\(_2\)Cl showed a good correlation between surface and deep maximum concentrations, indicating their relatively long lifetimes in seawater. This suggests that if a suitable proxy for production of these compounds can be found, then there is potential to parameterise their surface seawater concentrations without the necessity of using a water column model to compute the complex interactions between physical, biological and chemical processes. However, currently there is a lack of understanding regarding production of these gases within the water column. The TORERO data revealed an increased correlation of CHBr\(_3\) with CHBr\(_2\)Cl and CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) at the ocean surface compared to their deep maxima, although reasons for this are currently unknown. The ratio of CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\)/CHBr\(_3\) decreases toward the surface which could be linked to preferential bacterial break-down of CH\(_2\)Br\(_2\) in surface waters.

By comparing the TORERO depth profile of CCl\(_4\) to the ocean mixing model by Stemmler et al. (2013), it is evident that sub-surface enhancements can be formed by mixing down of dissolved gases from the surface. This makes it difficult to define the depth at which production is occurring and link sub-surface maxima to biological production of VSLH.

Simultaneous air and water sampling during TORERO allowed for the calculation of saturation anomalies and fluxes. Significant differences in flux estimates can be obtained by
using different calculation methods, resulting in uncertainties greater than analytical or calibration uncertainties between datasets. The ocean was super-saturated for the majority of VSLH with the exception of CH$_2$BrCl, which was near equilibrium, and CCl$_4$, which was under-saturated. In general VSLS sea-air fluxes during TORERO were representative of previous open ocean data, except for CHCl$_3$ which was double the previous global estimate of Worton et al. (2006). This high CHCl$_3$ flux could be indicative of greater than previously estimated oceanic emissions, or an overestimate of the anthropogenic contribution to CHCl$_3$ emissions (approximately 50%).

The TORERO data showed that emissions of VSLH were driven by wind speed with an exponential relationship for CH$_3$I, CH$_2$ICl, CH$_2$I$_2$ and CHCl$_3$. This has implications for global models which generally assume constant emissions, although meteorological models are well constrained by measurements therefore incorporating this relationship into a chemical model should be possible. The combination of enhanced flux and rapid vertical transport during periods of high wind speed could result in enhanced quantities of VSLH being transported to the UTLS. The wind speed relationship to VSLH emissions could prove important if the future climate was to become warmer and more strongly convective as suggested by Salawitch (2006) with respect to wind-driven upwellings.

Equatorial enhancements of atmospheric CHBr$_3$, and to a lesser extent CH$_2$Br$_2$, were not associated with higher sea-air emissions of these compounds in the tropics. Instead most of the variability in atmospheric bromocarbon concentrations during TORERO can be attributed to changes in MBL thickness and atmospheric mixing caused by the cold tongue of the East Pacific ocean upwelling. MBL concentrations of VSLH are sensitive to atmospheric dynamics and care should be exercised when interpreting air concentrations and linking them to oceanic emissions. The common assumption in global models of much higher sea-air emissions of bromocarbons in the equatorial regions compared to higher latitudes may need to be revisited.
Chapter 7

Concluding remarks

Very short-lived halocarbons (VSLH) are produced at depth and at the surface of the ocean (chapter 5). The production mechanisms are not comprehensively understood but include biological and photochemical production (section 6.1). The spatial distribution of VSLH is dependent on chemical species. Coastal regions provide high concentration, localised sources (chapter 4) whereas open-ocean fluxes are much lower yet widespread and for some VSLH, even ubiquitous over huge expanses of ocean with significant global contribution (section 6.3).

Iodocarbons often show spatial distributions disconnected from bromocarbons (section 4.4) in both the ocean (section 5.4.1) and the atmosphere (section 5.3.6). Methyl iodide has a surface ocean photochemical source (section 5.4.1.1), chloroiodomethane and diiodomethane show evidence of open-ocean, possibly phytoplankton derived sources (sections 4.3.2 and 5.3.6.1). More detailed investigations into VSLH production mechanisms are required to allow for the progression of accurate estimates of VSLH emission and distribution.

Advances in analytical instrumentation permit the detection of VSLH with ever increasing sensitivity and temporal resolution (chapter 2). However, accurate calibration of VSLH remains the most important factor in producing useful and comparable datasets (chapter 3). Stable gas standards are now available at atmospheric concentrations which should allow for more comparability of future datasets. Instrument and calibration gas standard inter-comparison between multiple research institutions is required in order to produce
global datasets for short-lived, reactive species with such varied spatial and temporal distributions.

Even with accurate calibration, care must be taken in the interpretation of VSLH measurements as physical parameters such as tropospheric boundary layer depth and ocean mixing can strongly influence their distributions in the atmosphere and ocean, respectively (sections 4.4, 6.5.1 and 6.5.1.1).

Due to the formation of reactive halogen species, VSLH play an important role in the troposphere and in conjunction with rapid vertical transport in the tropics, contribute to stratospheric ozone depletion. Meteorological factors driving this rapid transport in the atmosphere also influence oceanic transport and sea-air flux of VSLH. For example, at high wind speeds, VSLH produced within the ocean mixed layer are transported to the surface via ocean mixing (section 6.2). The sea-air flux is strongly wind speed dependant thus more VSLH enters the atmosphere.

Positive net radiative flux in the tropics drives inter-tropical air mass convergence, sea surface temperature, evaporation and convection in this region. It also influences thermohaline circulation, equatorial upwelling and even photochemical production at the sea-surface. This link between ocean and atmosphere is often missing in global models which assume fixed oceanic emissions (Liang et al., 2010; Ordóñez et al., 2012; Santos and Rast, 2013). Atmospheric chemistry models are often detached from their oceanic counterparts although work is ongoing for dimethyl sulphide, a species with large global dataset coverage, in combining climate and global ocean models such as NEMO (Nucleus for European Modelling of the Ocean, Le Clainche et al. (2010))

Future predictions of climate suggest that the atmosphere will become warmer and more convective (Salawitch, 2006), with implications on nutrient, temperature and upwelling sensitive, biological production of VSLH (Carpenter and Liss, 2000; Quack et al., 2004). On the other hand, melting polar ice caps providing freshwater input are predicted to weaken thermohaline circulation (Stouffer et al., 2006). Predicted ocean changes are numerous and include ecosystem (Rost et al., 2008), de-nitrification (Canfield et al., 2010) and ocean acidification from the increase of anthropogenic CO$_2$ (Doney et al., 2009) to name a few. The complex relationship between climate, oceanic and atmospheric circulation, oceanic production and ocean-atmospheric exchange requires a model to interpret.
Whilst the recent past climate change gradient may permit ocean-atmosphere disconnection in models, rapid climate shifts, such as the current polar ice retreat (Stammerjohn et al., 2012), could strongly influence ocean-atmosphere gas exchanges. With such sparse datasets for VSLH, measurements can span a decade in order to obtain reasonable global coverage (e.g. CHBr₃ – Quack and Wallace (2003)-present day 2013). In this same decade atmospheric CO₂ concentration has increased by 10 ppm (2.5%, at Mauna Loa observatory, NOAA). With such rapidly changing climate and chemistry, modelling of VSLH is paramount and should aim to model not only their atmospheric fate, but also their oceanic production otherwise the effect of future climate, or other rapidly changing variable, on the emission of these gases can never be predicted.

A logical extension to this body of work would be an attempt to link ocean and atmospheric models with respect to VSLH using meteorological inputs to drive an ocean model which would, in-turn, feed back into existing atmospheric chemistry models. The atmosphere driving the ocean and subsequent flux of trace gases from ocean to atmosphere modelled in this way would allow the model to better react to future and even current changes not accounted for with the data available to date.
Appendix A

Supplementary Figures and Information
A: Supplementary Figures and Information

A.1 Appendix figures

Figure A.1 – Mass loss graphs used for calculation of the permeation oven output.
Figure A.2 – Comparison of CHBr$_3$/CHBr$_2$Cl ratio with depth in the Arctic ($\sim$ 0$^\circ$C SST) and the ETP ($\sim$ 27$^\circ$C SST).
Figure A.3 – Ratios of CHCl$_3$ (top) and CH$_2$Br$_2$ (bottom) to CHBr$_3$. Decreasing ratio shows processing of the air mass, y-axis offset shows different emission ratios, slope = ratio of the lifetimes. Data coloured by salinity.
A.2 Auto Purge and Trap code

//Arduino code for auto purge and trap system. This code reads a relay trigger from the Unity2 and controls
//two valves which fill and empty the purge tube. Outputs to an LCD screen.
//It also runs isothermal heating control of the purge tube in the background.
//author Stephen J. Andrews

const int TDrelaypin = 7; // Pin attached to TD sample valve relay
const int SolenoidApin = 13; // Pin attached to solenoid via a transistor and relay
const int SolenoidBpin = 8; // Same as above
const int LM35Pin = A3; // Analog in with LM35 temp sensor attached
const int heaterPin = 10; // PWM output to SSR to control heating tape
const int tempsetpoint = 50; // What temp do you want the tube to be?
const int manualtriggerpin = 6;
const int omegatempvalue = 2;
const int omegaSSRout = 9;
const int peristaltic = 0;
const int floatswitch = A5;
const int omegatempvalue = 2;

float tempC;
float tempdiff;
int extrapower = 1;
boolean Running = false;
boolean linespurged = false;
boolean tubefilled = false;
boolean tubepurged = false;

Figure A.4 – GeosChem output ratio of CH$_2$Br$_2$ to CHBr$_3$. Decreasing ratio shows processing of the air mass, y-axis offset shows different emission ratios, slope = ratio of the lifetimes. Data coloured by latitude.
A: Supplementary Figures and Information

```java
boolean tubeflushed = false;
long countdownitem = 0;
long countdown = 0;
long count = 0;
long triggertime = 0;
long currenttime = 0;
long previousempttime = 0;
int dataupdatespeed = 1000;
long filterpurgeinterval = 280000; //105000
long linepurgeinterval = 305000; //125000
long fillinterval = 351500; //156500 adjust this to set the time in ms for the tube to fill for. 46.5 sec = 30mL
long flushinterval = 2146500; //1325000 time(ms) from triggertime until the water is emptied to waste
long flushtime = 2166500; //1345000 time(ms) that it empties the water for (from triggertime)
int LM35value = 0; //value read from temp sensor
int heatervalue = 0; //PWM value to trim heater by
long POS = 0; //percentage of setpoint
int mappedLM35 = 0;

LiquidCrystal lcd(12, 11, 5, 4, 3, 2);

void setup() {
  // set up the LCD's number of columns and rows:
  lcd.begin(20, 4);
  // initialize serial communications at 9600 bps:
  analogReference(INTERNAL); //analog scale to 1.1V for better resolution!
  pinMode(TDrelaypin, INPUT); //specify the pin modes
  pinMode(SolenoidApin, OUTPUT);
  pinMode(SolenoidBpin, OUTPUT);
  pinMode(omegaSSRout, OUTPUT);
  pinMode(peristaltic, OUTPUT);
  pinMode(floatswitch, INPUT);
  pinMode(manualtriggerpin, INPUT);
  digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, LOW);
  digitalWrite(SolenoidBpin, LOW);
  digitalWrite(peristaltic, HIGH);
}

void loop() {
  int floatswitchstate = digitalRead(floatswitch);
  if (floatswitchstate == LOW) {digitalWrite(peristaltic, LOW);
    lcd.setCursor(0, 0);
    lcd.print(" LEAK DETECTED!!!! ");
  }
  if (floatswitchstate == HIGH) {
    lcd.setCursor(0, 0);
    if (tempC < (tempsetpoint-1)){
      lcd.print(" Tube is below temp!");
    } else lcd.print(" Automated Purge&Trap");
```
A.2 Auto Purge and Trap code

```cpp
LM35value = analogRead(LM35Pin); //read the value from the temp sensor
tempC = LM35value / 9.31;
tempdiff = tempsetpoint - tempC;
float temppercent = tempdiff * 2.5 * extrapower;
//mappedLM35 = map(LM35value, 0, 1023, 0, 255); //scale 1024 analogue bits to 256 digital
//POS = mappedLM35 / tempsetpoint *100;
// if (POS < 80) {
    if (tempC >= tempsetpoint) {
        heatervalue = 0;
    } else if (tempC < tempsetpoint) {
        heatervalue = temppercent * 2.55;
    }
// }
// if (POS > 80) {
    // heatervalue = (255/100)*(100 - POS);
// }
analogWrite(omegaSSRout, heatervalue); //write the PWM value to the heater pin
analogWrite(heaterPin, omegatempvalue);

int TDtrigger = digitalRead(TDrelaypin);
int manualtrigger = digitalRead(manualtriggerpin);
if ((manualtrigger == LOW) && (Running == false)) {TDtrigger = HIGH;}
if (TDtrigger == HIGH) {
count = count + 1;
if ((count == 1) && (Running == false)) {
    triggertime = millis();
    lcd.setCursor(0,1);
    lcd.print("Purging sample lines");
countdownitem = linepurgeinterval;
linespurged = false;
tubefilled = false;
tubepurged = false;
tubeflushed = false;
Running = true;
}
else {count = 0 ;}
}
currenttime = millis();
if (Running == true){
    if ((currenttime - triggertime > filterpurgeinterval) && (linespurged == false)) {
        digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, HIGH);
        lcd.setCursor(0,1);
        lcd.print("Purging lines&filter");
    }
    if ((currenttime - triggertime > linepurgeinterval) && (linespurged == false)) {
        // Purge sample lines
    }
}
```
digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, HIGH);
digitalWrite(SolenoidBpin, HIGH);
//extrapower = 4;
lcd.setCursor(0,1);
lcd.print(" Filling purge tube ");
countdownitem = fillinterval;
linespurged = true;
}
// if ((currenttime - trigger > linepurgeinterval) && (linespurged == false)) { // }
if ((currenttime - trigger > fillinterval) && (tubefilled == false)) {
digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, LOW);
digitalWrite(SolenoidBpin, LOW);
lcd.setCursor(0,1);
lcd.print(" Purging tube ");
countdownitem = flushinterval;
tubefilled = true;
//extrapower = 4;
}
// if ((currenttime - trigger > linepurgeinterval) && (linespurged == false)) {
// }
if ((currenttime - trigger > flushinterval) && (tubepurged == false)) {
digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, LOW);
digitalWrite(SolenoidBpin, HIGH);
lcd.setCursor(0,1);
lcd.print(" Evacuating tube ");
countdownitem = flushinterval;
tubepurged = true;
}
// if ((currenttime - trigger > linepurgeinterval) && (linespurged == false)) {
// }
if ((currenttime - trigger > flushinterval) && (tubepurged == false)) {
digitalWrite(SolenoidApin, LOW);
digitalWrite(SolenoidBpin, LOW);
Running = false;
lcd.setCursor(0,1);
lcd.print(" Waiting for sample ");
tubeflushed = true;
}
if (currenttime - previoustemptime > dataupdatespeed) {
previoustemptime = currenttime;
lcd.setCursor(0, 3);
lcd.print("Tube = ");
lcd.print(tempC,1);
lcd.print((char)223);
lcd.print(" C ");
lcd.setCursor(14,3);
lcd.print(" P=");
A.2 Auto Purge and Trap code

lcd.print(temppercent,0);
lcd.print("% ");

if (Running == true) {
countdown = countdownitem - (currenttime - triggerertime);
lcd.setCursor(8,2);
lcd.print(countdown/1000);
lcd.print(" sec ");
//lcd.setCursor(15,3);
//lcd.print("TRUE ");
}
else {
lcd.setCursor(8,2);
lcd.print(" ");
//lcd.setCursor(15,3);
//lcd.print("FALSE");
}

287
### Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VSLH</td>
<td>Very Short-Lived Halocarbons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOAA</td>
<td>National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TROMPEX</td>
<td>TRade wind Ozone Photochemistry EXperiment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETP</td>
<td>East Tropical Pacific</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITCZ</td>
<td>Inter Tropical Convergence Zone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chl-a</td>
<td>Chlorophyll-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CFC</td>
<td>Chlorofluorocarbon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ODP</td>
<td>Ozone Depletion Potential</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCFC</td>
<td>Hydrochlorofluorocarbon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NASA-NEO</td>
<td>North American Space Agency-Near Earth Observation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UV</td>
<td>Ultra Violet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PSC</td>
<td>Polar Stratospheric Clouds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MBL</td>
<td>Marine Boundary Layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IOP</td>
<td>Iodine Oxidation Particles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCN</td>
<td>Cloud Condensation Nuclei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RHS</td>
<td>Reactive Halogen Species</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HFC</td>
<td>Hydrofluorocarbons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DOAS</td>
<td>Differential Optical Absorbtion Spectroscopy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNLC</td>
<td>High Nutrient Low Chlorophyll</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>DMS</strong></td>
<td>Dimethyl sulphide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>DMSO</strong></td>
<td>Dimethyl sulphoxide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TTL</strong></td>
<td>Tropical Tropopause Layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>DOM</strong></td>
<td>Dissolved Organic Matter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>LP-DOAS</strong></td>
<td>Long Path Differential Optical Absorption</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>HalOcAt</strong></td>
<td>Halocarbons in the Oceans and Atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TD-GC-MS</strong></td>
<td>Thermal Desorption- Gas Chromatography- Mass Spectrometry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TOF</strong></td>
<td>Time Of Flight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>QMS</strong></td>
<td>Quadrupole Mass Spectrometer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>LC-MS</strong></td>
<td>Liquid Chromatography- Mass Spectrometry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SIM</strong></td>
<td>Single Ion Monitoring</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>S/N</strong></td>
<td>Signal to Noise ratio</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NIST</strong></td>
<td>National Institute of Standards and Technology</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EI</strong></td>
<td>Electron Ionisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PCI</strong></td>
<td>Positive Chemical Ionisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NCI</strong></td>
<td>Negative Chemical ionisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ECD</strong></td>
<td>Electron Capture Detector</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>RF</strong></td>
<td>Research Flight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>DC</strong></td>
<td>Direct Current</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>LN$_2$</strong></td>
<td>Liquid Nitrogen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>WAS</strong></td>
<td>Whole Air Samples</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>I.D.</strong></td>
<td>Internal Diameter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Full Form</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FPSC</td>
<td>Free Piston Stirling Cooler</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PTFE</td>
<td>Polytrifluoroethylene</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PLOT</td>
<td>Porous Layer Open Tubular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPC</td>
<td>Electronic Pressure Control</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOD</td>
<td>Limit of Detection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOQ</td>
<td>Limit of Quantification</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THM</td>
<td>Trihalomethane</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VOC</td>
<td>Volatile Organic Compound</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PFA</td>
<td>Polyfluoroacetate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CTD</td>
<td>Conductivity Temperature Depth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TAO</td>
<td>Tropical Atmosphere Ocean project</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KA</td>
<td>NOAA ship Ka’imimoana</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LDR</td>
<td>Linear Dynamic Range</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PA</td>
<td>peak Area</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SD</td>
<td>Standard Deviation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IS</td>
<td>internal Standard</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MRR</td>
<td>Molar Response Ratio</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PEEK</td>
<td>Polyether ether ketone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOAA-ESRL</td>
<td>National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration- Earth System Research Laboratory</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IHALACE</td>
<td>International HALocarbons in Air Comparison Experiment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NCAR</td>
<td>National Center for Atmospheric Research</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GV</td>
<td>Gulf stream 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acronym</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEODAAS</td>
<td>NERC Earth Observation Data Acquisition and Analysis Service</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FAAM</td>
<td>Facility for Airborne Atmospheric Measurement</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SST</td>
<td>Sea Surface temperature</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BAE</td>
<td>British Aerospace Engineering</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MODIS</td>
<td>Moderate Resolution Imaging Spectroradiometer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HYSPLIT</td>
<td>HYbrid Single Particle Lagrangian Integrated Trajectory model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R/V</td>
<td>Research Vessel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NSF</td>
<td>National Science Foundation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TORERO</td>
<td>Tropical Ocean tRoposphere Exchange of Reactive halogen species and Oxygenated VOC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>STSW</td>
<td>Sub Tropical Surface Water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TSW</td>
<td>Tropical Surface Water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ESW</td>
<td>Equatorial Surface Water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENSO</td>
<td>El Nino/Southern Oscillation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SCIAMACHY</td>
<td>SCanning Imaging Absorption spectroMeter for Atmospheric CHartographY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NCAR</td>
<td>Trace Organic Gas Analyser</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PVC</td>
<td>Poly(vinyl chloride)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GPS</td>
<td>Global Positioning System</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PSU</td>
<td>Practical Salinity Units</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNLC</td>
<td>High Nutrient Low Chlorophyll</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OOMPH</td>
<td>Organics over the Ocean Modifying Particles in both Hemispheres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEA-WiFS</td>
<td>Sea-viewing Wide Field-of-view Sensor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acronym</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SZA</td>
<td>Solar Zenith Angle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH</td>
<td>Northern Hemisphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SH</td>
<td>Southern Hemisphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MLD</td>
<td>Mixed Layer Depth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SIO</td>
<td>cripps Institution of Oceanography</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EqPOS</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean and stratospheric/tropospheric atmosphere Study</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
References


Aguzzi, A. and Rossi, M. J.: The kinetics of the heterogeneous reaction of BrONO\textsubscript{2} with solid alkali halides at ambient temperature. A comparison with the interaction of ClONO\textsubscript{2} on NaCl and KBr, Physical Chemistry Chemical Physics, 1, 4337–4346, 1999.


REFERENCES


Bridgeman, C., Pyle, J., and Shallcross, D.: A three-dimensional model calculation of
the ozone depletion potential of 1-bromopropane (1- C\textsubscript{3}H\textsubscript{7}Br), Journal of geophysical research, 105, 26 493–26, 2000.


Davis, D., Chen, G., Kasibhatla, P., Jefferson, A., Tanner, D., Eisele, F., Lenschow, D., Neff, W., and Berresheim, H.: DMS oxidation in the Antarctic marine boundary layer: Comparison of model simulations and held observations of DMS, DMSO, DMSO₂,
REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


Jones, C. and Carpenter, L.: Solar photolysis of CH₂I₂, CH₂ICl, and CH₂IBr in water, saltwater, and seawater, Environmental science & technology, 39, 6130–6137, 2005.


Klick, S.: The release of volatile halocarbons to seawater by untreated and heavy metal exposed samples of the brown seaweed Fucus Vesiculosus, Marine chemistry, 42, 211–221, 1993.

REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


REFERENCES


Yokouchi, Y., Mukai, H., Yamamoto, H., Otsuki, A., Saitoh, C., and Nojiri, Y.: Distribution of methyl iodide, ethyl iodide, bromoform, and dibromomethane over the ocean


